# COMPOSITIO MATHEMATICA 

# Birational geometry of the moduli space of quartic K3 surfaces 

Radu Laza and Kieran O'Grady

Compositio Math. 155 (2019), 1655-1710.

doi:10.1112/S0010437X19007516

# Birational geometry of the moduli space of quartic K3 surfaces 

Radu Laza and Kieran O'Grady


#### Abstract

By work of Looijenga and others, one understands the relationship between Geometric Invariant Theory (GIT) and Baily-Borel compactifications for the moduli spaces of degree-2 K3 surfaces, cubic fourfolds, and a few other related examples. The similarlooking cases of degree- 4 K3 surfaces and double Eisenbud-Popescu-Walter (EPW) sextics turn out to be much more complicated for arithmetic reasons. In this paper, we refine work of Looijenga in order to handle these cases. Specifically, in analogy with the so-called Hassett-Keel program for the moduli space of curves, we study the variation of log canonical models for locally symmetric varieties of Type IV associated to $D$ lattices. In particular, for the 19-dimensional case, we conjecturally obtain a continuous one-parameter interpolation between the GIT and Baily-Borel compactifications for the moduli of degree-4 $K 3$ surfaces. The analogous 18 -dimensional case, which corresponds to hyperelliptic degree-4 K3 surfaces, can be verified by means of Variation of Geometric Invariant Theory (VGIT) quotients.


## Introduction

An important problem in algebraic geometry is to construct a geometric compactification for the moduli space of polarized degree- $d K 3$ surfaces $\mathscr{K}_{d}$. By global Torelli, $\mathscr{K}_{d}$ is isomorphic to a locally symmetric variety $\mathscr{F}_{d}$ and hence it has natural compactifications such as the Baily-Borel compactification $\mathscr{F}_{d}^{*}$, Mumford's toroidal compactifications, and more generally Looijenga's semitoric compactifications. However, a priori, these compactifications are only birational to the 'geometric' compactifications, obtained, for example, by Geometric Invariant Theory (GIT). It is natural to compare the two kinds of compactifications. An understanding of the relationship between the Baily-Borel and GIT compactifications leads to deep results about the period map (e.g. see [Sha80, Loo09]) and to results about the structure of the GIT quotient. The simplest instance of such comparison results is the isomorphism

$$
(\mathfrak{H} / \operatorname{SL}(2, \mathbb{Z}))^{*} \cong\left|\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{2}}(3)\right| / / \operatorname{SL}(3)\left(\cong \mathbb{P}^{1}\right)
$$

between the compactified $j$-line and the GIT moduli space of plane cubic curves. In a vast generalization of this fact, Looijenga [Loo03a, Loo03b] has devised a comparison framework that applies to locally symmetric varieties associated to type IV or $I_{1, n}$ Hermitian symmetric domains. This framework was successfully applied in the case of moduli of degree-2 K3 surfaces

[^0]
## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

[Loo86, Sha80], cubic fourfolds [Loo09, Laz10], and a few other related examples (e.g. cubic threefolds, del Pezzo surfaces, etc.). The nominal purpose of the present paper is to investigate the analogous cases of degree-4 K3 surfaces [Sha81] and double Eisenbud-Popescu-Walter (EPW) sextics [O'Gr15, O'Gr16]. While studying these cases, we uncovered a rich and intriguing picture.

The starting point of our investigation are two limitations in Looijenga's construction. First of all, a certain technical assumption in Looijenga's work does not hold for quartic $K 3$ surfaces (nor for double EPW sextics), while it does hold for $K 3$ surfaces of arbitrary degree $d \neq 4$ (see Lemma 8.1 in [Loo03b]). Namely, for arithmetic reasons, the combinatorics of the hyperplane arrangement involved in Looijenga's construction [Loo03b] is much richer for polarized K3 surfaces of degree 4 than for polarized $K 3$ surfaces of degree $d \neq 4$ (similarly, the hyperplane arrangement involved in the period map for double EPW sextics is much richer than the hyperplane arrangement relevant to cubic fourfolds). Secondly, and this is a consideration which applies to $K 3$ surfaces of any degree, there exist a plethora of GIT models. In the low-degree cases considered here and in the literature, there might be a 'natural' choice for GIT, but this is misleading (see [CMJL14] for a hint of what would happen already in degree 6). The solution that we propose in order to handle these two issues is to give flexibility to Looijenga's construction by considering a continuous variation of models. More precisely, we recall that for a locally symmetric variety $\mathscr{F}=\mathscr{D} / \Gamma$, Baily and Borel have shown that the homonymous compactification $\mathscr{F}^{*}$ is the Proj of the ring of automorphic functions, i.e. $\mathscr{F}^{*}=\operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}, \lambda)$, where $\lambda$ is the Hodge bundle. Looijenga's deep insight was to observe that in certain situations of geometric interest, a certain GIT quotient $\mathfrak{M}$ is nothing but the Proj of the ring of meromorphic automorphic forms with poles on a (geometrically meaningful) Heegner (i.e. Noether-Lefschetz) divisor $\Delta$, and thus $\mathfrak{M}=\operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}, \lambda+\Delta)$. Furthermore, Looijenga has shown that under a certain assumption on $\Delta$ (which fails for quartic $K 3$ surfaces and for double EPW sextics), Proj $R(\mathscr{F}, \lambda+\Delta)$ has an explicit combinatorial/arithmetic description. Our approach is to continuously interpolate between the two models by controlling the order of poles for the meromorphic automorphic function, i.e. to consider $\operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}, \lambda+\beta \Delta)$, where $\beta \in[0,1]$. This allows us to understand the case of quartics and, more importantly, to capture more GIT quotients.

While a variation of models $\operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}, \lambda+\beta \Delta)$ makes sense for general Type IV locally symmetric varieties (and also ball quotients), we focus here on the so-called $D$-tower of locally symmetric varieties, i.e. Type IV locally symmetric varieties associated to lattices $U^{2} \oplus D_{n}$. More precisely, we let $\mathscr{F}(N)$ be the $N$-dimensional locally symmetric variety corresponding to the lattice $\Lambda_{N}:=U^{2} \oplus D_{N-2}$, and an arithmetic group $\Gamma_{N}$, which is intermediate between the orthogonal group $O^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)$, and the stable orthogonal subgroup $\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)$. With these definitions in place (see $\S 1$ for details), $\mathscr{F}(19)$ is the period space for quartic $K 3$ surfaces, $\mathscr{F}(20)$ is the period space for double EPW sextics modulo the duality involution (or EPW cubes), and $\mathscr{F}(18)$ is the period space for hyperelliptic quartic surfaces. Thus, we compare the Baily-Borel compactifications $\mathscr{F}(N)^{*}$ for $N \in\{18,19,20\}$ to the GIT moduli spaces $\mathfrak{M}(N)$, where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathfrak{M}(18) & :=\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(4) \boxtimes \mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(4)\right| / / \operatorname{Aut}\left(\mathbb{P}^{1} \times \mathbb{P}^{1}\right), \\
\mathfrak{M}(19) & :=\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right| / / \operatorname{PGL}(4) \\
\mathfrak{M}(20) & :=\mathbb{L} \mathbb{G}\left(\bigwedge^{3} \mathbb{C}^{6}\right) / / / \mathrm{PGL}_{6}(\mathbb{C}) .
\end{aligned}
$$

(Actually, for $N=20$, we should take the quotient of $\mathfrak{M}(20)$ modulo the duality involution; see (2.3.4).) We let $\lambda(N)$ be the Hodge (or automorphic) orbiline bundle on $\mathscr{F}(N)$ and we choose the boundary divisor $\Delta(N)$ so that $\operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}(N), \lambda(N)+\Delta(N)) \cong \mathfrak{M}(N)$. (We emphasize that $\Delta(N)$ is a divisor inside the locally symmetric variety $\mathscr{F}(N)$ and in particular it has nothing

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

to do with the boundary of the Baily-Borel compactification or toroidal compactifications. We use the word 'boundary' in accordance with standard terminology in minimal model program (MMP) and specifically variations of log canonical models.)

We will show that $\mathscr{F}(N)$ is isomorphic to a Heegner divisor $H_{h}(N+1) \subset \mathscr{F}(N+1)$, which is the 'main' component of the boundary divisor $\Delta(N)$. Hence, the varieties $\mathscr{F}(N)$ fit into a tower joining periods of hyperelliptic quartics, quartic surfaces, and double EPW sextics (something which has a clear geometric counterpart). By a careful analysis of the $D$-tower, and an application of Borcherds' results, we arrive at a conjecture predicting the behavior of the models

$$
\mathscr{F}(N, \beta):=\operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}(N), \lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))
$$

as $\beta$ varies between 0 and 1 . Below we summarize our predictions.
Conjecture. Let $15 \leqslant N \leqslant 23$. The ring of sections $R(\mathscr{F}(N), \lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))$ is finitely generated for $\beta \in[0,1] \cap \mathbb{Q}$, and the walls of the Mori chamber decomposition of the cone

$$
\{\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N) \mid \beta \in \mathbb{Q}, \beta>0\}
$$

are generated by $\lambda(N)+(1 / k) \Delta(N)$, where $k \in\{1, \ldots, N-10\}$ and $k \neq N-11$. The behavior of $\lambda(N)+(1 / k) \Delta(N)$, for $k$ as above, is described as follows. For $k=1, \mathscr{F}(N, 1)$ is obtained from $\mathscr{F}(N, 1-\epsilon)$ by contracting the strict transform of $\operatorname{supp} \Delta(N)$. If $2 \leqslant k$, then the birational map between $\mathscr{F}(N, 1 / k-\epsilon)$ and $\mathscr{F}(N, 1 / k+\epsilon)$ is a flip whose center is described in Prediction 5.1.1.

Specifically, let us spell out the conjecture for the case of quartic surfaces.
Prediction. The variation of models $\operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}(19), \lambda(19)+\beta \Delta(19))$ interpolating between the Baily-Borel compactification $\mathscr{F}_{4}^{*}(\cong \mathscr{F}(19))$ for quartic $K 3$ surfaces $(\beta=0)$ and the GIT quotient for quartic surfaces $(\beta=1)$ undergoes birational transformations (flips, except for the two boundary cases) at the following critical values for $\beta$ :

$$
\beta \in\left\{0, \frac{1}{9}, \frac{1}{7}, \frac{1}{6}, \frac{1}{5}, \frac{1}{4}, \frac{1}{3}, \frac{1}{2}, 1\right\} .
$$

Furthermore, the centers of the flips for $\beta<\frac{1}{5}$ correspond to $T_{3,3,4}, T_{2,4,5}$, and $T_{2,3,7}$ marked $K 3$ surfaces (loci inside the period space $\mathscr{F}(19)$ ) and those loci are flipped to the loci in $\mathfrak{M}(19)$ of quartics with $E_{14}, E_{13}$, and $E_{12}$ singularities, respectively (see Shah [Sha80]).

The birational modifications at the two ends of the interval were known by Shah and Looijenga, respectively. In [LO18b], we have given a complete geometric (partly conjectural, partly provable) matching between a slight refinement of Shah's Type IV stratification [Sha81, Theorem 2.4] (the indeterminacy locus of the period map) in the GIT quotient $\mathfrak{M}$ and the strata resulting from the flips predicted above (see [LO18b, §4.3]). Furthermore, the behavior at $\beta=\frac{1}{9}, \frac{1}{7}, \frac{1}{6}$ and $\beta=\frac{1}{2}$ is understood (see [LO18b, §6] and [LO18b, § 5.4], respectively).

In [LO18a], we have proved that our conjecture holds for $N=18$ (hyperelliptic quartic K3 surfaces) by means of techniques similar to those employed in [CMJL14]. Since our constructions are inductive, and since the geometric behavior (for hyperelliptic quartics) identified in [LO18a] matches what we predicted in [LO18b] (for quartics), we have no doubt of the validity of our conjecture for quartic $K 3$ surfaces. Similarly, earlier work on EPW sextics [O'Gr15, O'Gr16] seems compatible with our conjectures; presumably our predictions (for $N=20$ ) can be checked inductively.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Remark. By decomposing the period map for quartic surfaces into elementary birational transformations, we open the door to wall-crossing arguments. For instance, starting from the cohomology of the GIT quotient for quartic surfaces (see Kirwan [Kir89]) and, following the flips discussed above, one can compute the cohomology of the Baily-Borel compactification $\mathscr{F}_{4}^{*}$. For comparison's sake, we recall that in the case of degree-2 K3 surfaces, there is no intermediate flip and thus the two extremal cases suffice to compare the GIT and the Baily-Borel compactifications (see [Sha80] and [Loo86], and [KL89] for the computation of the cohomology).

The variational approach to the analysis of birational maps is the natural one from the perspective of contemporary MMP, and its power in the context of moduli has been in evidence since the appearance of Thaddeus' work on Variation of Geometric Invariant Theory (VGIT) [Tha96]. An inspiration for our work is the so-called Hassett-Keel program (see [HH13]) for moduli of curves (which studies the variation of log canonical models Proj $R\left(\bar{M}_{g}, K+\alpha \Delta\right)$ of the Deligne-Mumford compactification $\bar{M}_{g}$ ). Experts in the field have speculated on the existence of an analogue of the Hassett-Keel program for (special) surfaces; our study can be viewed as a first example of a Hassett-Keel program for surfaces. Indeed, beyond the obvious analogy $\left(\lambda+\beta \Delta\right.$ may easily be rewritten as $\left.K_{\mathscr{F}}+\alpha \Delta^{\prime}\right)$, the modular behavior is also similar: for instance, the first birational wall crossing for quartic $K 3$ surfaces is associated to Dolgachev singularities in a manner similar to the case of curves with cusp singularities.

On the other hand, there is a richer structure compared to the Hassett-Keel program. Namely, the birational transformations that occur in our situation are controlled by the arithmetic and combinatorics of the hyperplane arrangement associated to $\Delta$. The emerging picture of periods of quartic $K 3$ surfaces is more complex and subtle than that of periods of degree- $2 K 3$ surfaces, but nonetheless Looijenga's insight that arithmetic controls the birational models of $\mathscr{F}_{d}^{*}$ is still valid. We view our work as a quantitative and qualitative refinement of Looijenga's seminal work [Loo03b].

The birational geometry of moduli spaces of $K 3$ surfaces was previously studied from the perspective of the Kodaira dimension by Gritsenko et al. [GHS07]. We share with them the main technical tool, namely Borcherds' construction [Bor95] of automorphic forms for Type IV domains (and subsequent improvements due to Bruinier [Bru02] and Bergeron et al. [BLMM17]).

## Structure of the paper

In $\S 1$, we introduce the $D$-tower of period spaces $\{\mathscr{F}(N)\}_{N \geqslant 3}$. The focus here is on the arithmetic of $D$-lattices. We define the main Heegner divisors, namely the nodal, hyperelliptic, and unigonal divisors in $\mathscr{F}(N)$, denoted respectively $H_{n}(N), H_{h}(N)$, and $H_{u}(N)$. If $N=19$ (the period space for quartic surfaces), they have a well-known geometric meaning and in other dimensions they are the arithmetic analogue of the divisors for $N=19$. The salient point in the $D$-tower is that $\mathscr{F}(N-1)$ is isomorphic to the hyperelliptic Heegner divisor $H_{h}(N)$ of $\mathscr{F}(N)$. Our boundary divisor $\Delta(N)$ is equal to $H_{h}(N) / 2$ except when $N \equiv 3,4(\bmod 8)$, in which case $\Delta(N)=\left(H_{h}(N)+H_{u}(N)\right) / 2$. (Note that the factor $\frac{1}{2}$ appears because the quotient map from the relevant Type IV domain to $\mathscr{F}(N)$ is ramified over the hyperelliptic divisor, and also over the unigonal divisor, if $N \equiv 3,4(\bmod 8)$.) This leads to an inductive behavior.

In the following $\S 2$, we go through results which are (more or less) known, namely that $\mathscr{F}(19)$ is the period space of degree- 4 polarized $K 3$ surfaces, that $\mathscr{F}(18)$ is the period space of hyperelliptic quartics, and that $\mathscr{F}(20)$ is the period space of double EPW sextics up to the duality involution (alternatively, it is the period space of EPW cubes).

In § 3, we study the quasi-pull-back of Borcherds' celebrated automorphic form given by two embeddings of the lattice $\Lambda_{N}$ into $\mathrm{I}_{2,26}$. The resulting relations between the automorphic line
bundle on $\mathscr{F}(N)$, and the Heegner divisors $H_{n}(N), H_{h}(N)$, and $H_{u}(N)$ (see Theorems 3.1.1 and 3.1.2), are key results for our work.

Section 4 contains a proof that $\mathscr{F}(19,1)=\operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}(19), \lambda(19)+\Delta(19))$ is isomorphic to the GIT moduli space $\mathfrak{M}(19)$. An analogous proof shows that $\mathscr{F}(18,1)$ is isomorphic to the GIT moduli space $\mathfrak{M}(18)$ and we expect that a similar result holds for $N=20$, i.e. that $\mathscr{F}(20,1)$ is isomorphic to $\mathfrak{M}(20)$ modulo the duality involution. In other words, if $N \in\{18,19\}$, then the schemes $\mathscr{F}(N, \beta)$, for $\beta \in(0,1) \cap \mathbb{Q}$, interpolate between the Baily-Borel compactification $\mathscr{F}(N)^{*}$ and the GIT compactification $\mathfrak{M}(N)$.

In the last section (§5), we identify the critical values of $\beta$ and the corresponding centers. To describe our work, let us review the basic picture in Looijenga. The starting point for him is to note that frequently the GIT quotients $\mathfrak{M}$ are obtained by contracting a certain Heegner divisor $H$ in $\mathscr{F}$. Since the divisor $\lambda+H$ restricts trivially to $H$, one gets that the GIT quotient is the Proj of a ring of meromorphic automorphic forms with poles on $H$. The complication of recovering the GIT quotient, say $\mathfrak{M} \cong \operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}, \lambda+H)$, from $\mathscr{F}^{*}=\operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}, \lambda)$ comes from the fact that the hyperplanes in the arrangement $\mathscr{H}$ (defining the Heegner divisor $H=\mathscr{H} / \Gamma$ ) intersect and, according to [Loo03b], the intersection strata have to be flipped starting with the largest codimension. While this flipping behavior is easy to understand if the strata are not too deep (e.g. for degree- $2 K 3$ surfaces or cubic fourfolds), it is clear that for the quartic examples, or other examples where lots of intersections occur, it is wise to consider a continuous variation of the parameter $\lambda+\beta H$. Roughly, $\beta=0$ is the known case, $\beta=1$ is the target, and in between we understand the flipping behavior by wall crossings.

By taking the variational point of view described above, we are able to give a quantitative refinement of the flipping behavior predicted by Looijenga. Specifically, our computations show that the critical value of $\beta$ for which a specified intersection stratum $Z$ should be flipped (in the variation of models given by $\lambda+\beta H)$ is determined by the $\log$ canonical threshold of $Z \subset \mathbb{P}^{N}$. The precise formulae (see $\S 5.1 .1$ ) are more complicated as one has to take into account the ramification behavior. While these arguments and computations are not explicitly contained in [Loo03b], it is natural to call the computations of the (potential) critical $\beta$ the Looijenga predictions. The surprising aspect that we discovered in our study is that these are only first-order predictions. Namely, as explained below, some arithmetic corrections are needed. Our final results are discussed in § 5.1.2 (especially Prediction 5.1.1).

By comparing the GIT quotient for quartic surfaces of Shah [Sha81] with the predicted Looijenga [Loo03b] model, we have observed a puzzling thing: the flips associated to intersections of components of the hyperelliptic arrangement predicted by Looijenga do occur, but, roughly speaking, only up to half the dimension. The explanation for this is in the Borcherds-Gritsenko relations between the automorphic line bundle and the Heegner divisors that were established in §3. In short, while, for large $N, H_{h}(N)$ is birationally contractible in $\mathscr{F}(N)$, this is far from true for $N$ small: in fact, $H_{h}(N)$ is ample on $\mathscr{F}(N)$ (and proportional to $\lambda(N)$ ) for $N \leqslant 10$. (This last fact was previously observed by Gritsenko [Gri18] in a different context.) This leads to a different behavior for the flips associated to high-codimension intersection strata. Very roughly, all the sufficiently deep strata (in the $D$-tower example) will be flipped at once. In other words, the Looijenga predictions come from combinatorics of the hyperplane arrangement: this is the dominating factor for small codimension, while for high codimension there are arithmetic corrections that are dominating.

The essential ingredient that is missing for making our predictions/conjectures into theorems is to show that all the centers of the birational transformations that occur in a variation of models on $\mathscr{F}=\mathscr{D} / \Gamma$ associated to varying $\lambda+\beta \Delta$ are of Shimura type (i.e. $\mathscr{D}^{\prime} / \Gamma^{\prime}$ ). This a

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Fulton-type arithmetic conjecture. As mentioned, we have checked this (in the $D$-tower case) for $N=18$ [LO18a]; also, the case $N=19$ is essentially complete [LO18b].

## Notation and conventions

We follow established conventions on integral lattices following Nikulin [Nik80]. In particular, the lattice $\Lambda_{N}=D_{N-2} \oplus U^{2}$ plays an essential role in our paper.

Throughout the paper, $\mathscr{F}=\mathscr{D} / \Gamma$ is a locally symmetric variety of Type IV, i.e. the quotient of a bounded symmetric domain of Type IV modulo an arithmetic group (see § 1.2 for a brief review). The notation $\mathscr{F}$ might come with various additional decorations, which help specify it, e.g. $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$ indicates the underlying lattice $\Lambda$ of signature $(2, *)$ and arithmetic group $\Gamma \subset O(\Lambda)$. Starting with $\S 2, \mathscr{F}(N)$ is a specific $N$-dimensional locally symmetric variety (see Proposition 1.2.3) associated to the lattice $\Lambda_{N}$. There are natural inclusion maps $\mathscr{F}(N-1) \hookrightarrow \mathscr{F}(N)$ (cf. (1.7.1)); our main focus is $\mathscr{F}(19) \cong \mathscr{F} 4$, the moduli space of quartic $K 3$ surfaces. The Baily-Borel compactifications are indicated by a superscript *, e.g. $\mathscr{F}(N)^{*}$. The GIT quotients are typically denoted by $\mathfrak{M}$ with various identifying decorations. We view the period map $\mathfrak{p}$ as a birational map going from an appropriate GIT quotient $\mathfrak{M}$ to a Baily-Borel compactification $\mathscr{F}^{*}$. The notation $\beta$ is used to denote a rational number in $[0,1]$, which should be understood as an interpolating parameter between a GIT quotient ( $\beta=1$ ) and a Baily-Borel compactification $(\beta=0)$. In the final $\S 5, \mathscr{F}(N, \beta)$ denotes a birational modification of $\mathscr{F}(N)^{*}$.

We use repeatedly the Hodge bundle $\lambda$ on $\mathscr{F}$ and the boundary divisor $\Delta$ (Definition 1.3.6), which is a Heegner divisor on $\mathscr{F}$. We use various other Heegner divisors $H=\mathscr{H} / \Gamma \subset \mathscr{F}=\mathscr{D} / \Gamma$ (see §1.3.1 for a quick review), especially the nodal $H_{n}$, the hyperelliptic $H_{h}$, and the unigonal $H_{u}$ divisors (see Definition 1.3.4). Typically, the divisors have the same decorations as the ambient locally symmetric variety (e.g. $H_{h}(N)$ is a divisor in $\mathscr{F}(N)$ ). In general, Borcherds' relations (e.g. (3.1.1)) refer to a linear equivalence between the Hodge bundle $\lambda$ and some Heegner divisors on $\mathscr{F}$ (viewed in $\left.\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{F})_{\mathbb{Q}}\right)$.

## 1. $D$-lattices and the associated locally symmetric varieties

We introduce $D$ locally symmetric varieties. There is one such variety (of dimension $N:=n+2$ ) for each $D_{n}$-lattice. The period spaces of hyperelliptic quartic $K 3$ surfaces, quartic $K 3$ surfaces, and desingularized EPW sextics correspond to $D_{16}, D_{17}$, and $D_{18}$, respectively; see $\S 2$. We will introduce the Heegner divisors on $D$ locally symmetric varieties which are relevant for our work: the nodal, hyperelliptic, and unigonal divisors (Definition 1.3.4). These divisors are the generalization of the familiar divisors with the same name on the period space for quartic $K 3$ surfaces. We will prove that the hyperelliptic Heegner divisor on a $D$ period space of dimension $N$ is isomorphic to the $D$ locally symmetric variety of dimension $N-1$ (Proposition 1.4.5); thus, we have an infinite tower of nested $D$ locally symmetric varieties (§ 1.7). The introduction of this $D$-tower allows us to make inductive arguments later on.

Remark 1.0.1. $D$ locally symmetric varieties of dimension up to 10 have appeared in work of Gritsenko; see [Gri18, §3].

## 1.1 $D$-lattices

Let $\Lambda$ be a lattice, i.e. a finitely generated torsion-free abelian group equipped with an integral non-degenerate bilinear symmetric form (, ). If $v \in \Lambda$, we let $v^{2}=(v, v)$. Given a ring $R$, we let $\Lambda_{R}:=\Lambda \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} R$ and we extend by linearity the quadratic form to $\Lambda_{R}$. We let $A_{\Lambda}:=\operatorname{Hom}(\Lambda, \mathbb{Z}) / \Lambda$ be the discriminant group of $\Lambda$. The quadratic form defines an embedding $\operatorname{Hom}(\Lambda, \mathbb{Z}) \subset \Lambda_{\mathbb{Q}}$.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Let $v \in \Lambda$. The divisibility of $v$ is defined to be the positive generator of $(v, \Lambda)$ and is denoted $\operatorname{div}(v)$. Thus, $v / \operatorname{div}(v)$ is an element of $\Lambda_{\mathbb{Q}}$ which belongs to $\operatorname{Hom}(\Lambda, \mathbb{Z})$ and hence it determines an element $v^{*} \in A_{\Lambda}$. Now suppose that $\Lambda$ is an even lattice. The embedding $\operatorname{Hom}(\Lambda, \mathbb{Z}) \subset \Lambda_{\mathbb{Q}}$ induces a discriminant quadratic form $q_{\Lambda}: A_{\Lambda} \rightarrow \mathbb{Q} / 2 \mathbb{Z}$. We recommend the classical paper by Nikulin [Nik80] as a reference for definitions and results on lattices.

For us, $U$ is the standard hyperbolic plane and the standard $A D E$ root lattices are negative definite. Thus, $E_{8}$ is the unique even unimodular negative-definite lattice of rank 8 ; in the literature, sometimes, it is denoted by $E_{8}(-1)$ or $-E_{8}$. If $0<p \leqslant q$ and $p \equiv q(\bmod 8)$, then $\mathrm{I}_{p, q}$ stands for an even unimodular lattice of signature $(p, q)$; such a lattice is unique up to isomorphism. For $m \in \mathbb{Z}$, we let $(m)$ be the rank-1 lattice with quadratic form that takes the value $m$ on a generator. We let

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{n}:=\left\{x \in \mathbb{Z}^{n} \mid \sum_{i} x_{i} \equiv 0 \quad(\bmod 2)\right\} \subset \mathbb{Z}^{n} \tag{1.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and we equip $D_{n}$ with the restriction of the negative of the standard Euclidean pairing on $\mathbb{Z}^{n}$. Thus, $D_{1} \cong(-4), D_{2} \cong A_{1} \oplus A_{1}, D_{3}=A_{3}$, and $D_{n}$ is the negative-definite root lattice with Dynkin diagram $D_{n}$ if $n \geqslant 4$. Let $\alpha_{n}, \beta_{n} \in A_{D_{n}}$ be the classes of ( $1 / 2,1 / 2, \ldots, 1 / 2$ ) and $(-1 / 2,1 / 2, \ldots, 1 / 2)$, respectively. If $n$ is odd, then $4 \alpha_{n}=4 \beta_{n}=0$ and $\alpha_{n}+\beta_{n}=0$. If $n$ is even, then $2 \alpha_{n}=2 \beta_{n}=0$. Moreover,

$$
\begin{equation*}
q_{D_{n}}\left(\alpha_{n}\right)=q_{D_{n}}\left(\beta_{n}\right) \equiv-n / 4 \quad(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z}), \quad q_{D_{n}}\left(\alpha_{n}+\beta_{n}\right) \equiv n+1 \quad(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z}) . \tag{1.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following result is an easy exercise.
Claim 1.1.1. If $n$ is odd, then $A_{D_{n}}$ is cyclic of order 4, generated by $\alpha_{n}$. If $n$ is even, then $A_{D_{n}}$ is the Klein group, generated by $\alpha_{n}$ and $\beta_{n}$.

For $N \geqslant 3$, let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda_{N}:=U^{2} \oplus D_{N-2} \tag{1.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(A_{\Lambda_{N}}, q_{\Lambda_{N}}\right) \cong\left(A_{D_{N-2}}, q_{D_{N-2}}\right) \tag{1.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Below is the key definition of the present subsection.
Definition 1.1.2. Let $N \geqslant 3$. A lattice $\Lambda$ is a dimension- $N D$-lattice if it is isomorphic to $\Lambda_{N}$, and in that case a decoration of $\Lambda$ is an element $\xi \in A_{\Lambda}$ of square 1 (modulo $2 \mathbb{Z}$ ). A dimension- $N$ decorated $D$-lattice is a couple $(\Lambda, \xi)$, where $\Lambda$ is a dimension- $N D$-lattice and $\xi \in A_{\Lambda}$ is a decoration.

Remark 1.1.3. Let $\Lambda$ be a dimension- $N D$-lattice. By (1.1.4) and (1.1.2), there exists a decoration of $\Lambda$ and it is unique unless $N \equiv 6(\bmod 8)$. Of course, when $\xi$ is unique, the decoration is irrelevant. However, including the decorations allows us to treat the exceptional cases (i.e. $N \equiv 6$ $(\bmod 8))$ uniformly and to make certain hidden structures more transparent. Note also that any two $N$-dimensional decorated $D$-lattices are isomorphic.

Remark 1.1.4. If $N \geqslant 3$, then $\Lambda_{N} \oplus E_{8} \cong \Lambda_{N+8}$ (both are even unimodular lattices, of signature $(2, N+8))$. More generally, writing $N-2=8 k+a$ with $0 \leqslant k$ and $a \in\{0, \ldots, 7\}$, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda_{N} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{a} \tag{1.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

### 1.2 Locally symmetric varieties of Type IV

Suppose that $\Lambda$ is a lattice of signature $(2, m)$. We let

$$
\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}:=\left\{[\sigma] \in \mathbb{P}\left(\Lambda_{\mathbb{C}}\right) \mid \sigma^{2}=0,(\sigma+\bar{\sigma})^{2}>0\right\} .
$$

Then $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}$ is a complex manifold of dimension $m$, with two connected components $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{ \pm}$, interchanged by complex conjugation (the 'real part' projection $\Lambda_{\mathbb{C}} \rightarrow \Lambda_{\mathbb{R}}$ identifies $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}$ with the set of oriented positive-definite two-dimensional subspaces of $\Lambda_{\mathbb{R}}$ ). Each of $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{ \pm}$is a bounded symmetric domain of Type IV. The orthogonal group $O(\Lambda)$ acts naturally on $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}$ (left action). Let $O^{+}(\Lambda)<O(\Lambda)$ be the subgroup of elements fixing each of $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{ \pm}$. By definition, $O^{+}(\Lambda)$ acts on $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$. For a finite-index subgroup $\Gamma<O^{+}(\Lambda)$, we let

$$
\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma):=\Gamma \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} .
$$

Then $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$ is naturally a complex space of dimension $n$. By a celebrated result of Baily and Borel, there exists a projective variety $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)^{*}$ (the Baily-Borel compactification of $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$ ) containing an open dense subset isomorphic to $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$ as analytic space. In particular, $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$ has a compatible structure of a quasi-projective variety.

Definition 1.2.1. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a dimension- $N$ decorated $D$-lattice. Then $O(\Lambda)$ acts naturally on $A_{\Lambda}$ and hence we may define

$$
\Gamma_{\xi}:=\left\{\phi \in O^{+}(\Lambda) \mid \phi(\xi)=\xi\right\} .
$$

We let $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$ be the associated locally symmetric variety (of dimension $N$ ): this is a $D$ locally symmetric variety. To simplify notation, we will write $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ for $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$.

We will compare $\Gamma_{\xi}$ to more familiar subgroups of $O^{+}(\Lambda)$. First, we recall that if $\Lambda$ is an even lattice, the stable orthogonal subgroup $\widetilde{O}(\Lambda)<O(\Lambda)$ is the kernel of the natural homomorphism $\widetilde{O}(\Lambda) \rightarrow O\left(A_{\Lambda}\right)$. We let $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda):=O^{+}(\Lambda) \cap \widetilde{O}(\Lambda)$. Notice that $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$ is of finite index in $O(\Lambda)$.

Example 1.2.2. Let $\Lambda$ be an even lattice and $r \in \Lambda$ non-isotropic. Let

$$
\begin{array}{rcc}
\Lambda_{\mathbb{Q}} & \xrightarrow{\rho_{r}} & \Lambda_{\mathbb{Q}}  \tag{1.2.1}\\
x & \mapsto & x-\frac{2(x, r)}{r^{2}} r
\end{array}
$$

be the reflection in the hyperplane $r^{\perp}$. If $r$ is primitive, then $\rho_{r}(\Lambda) \subset \Lambda$ if and only if $r^{2} \mid 2 \operatorname{div}(r)$; if this is the case we use the same symbol $\rho_{r}$ for the corresponding element of $O(\Lambda)$. One checks easily the following results:
(1) $\rho_{r} \in O^{+}(\Lambda)$ if and only if $r^{2}<0$;
(2) if $r^{2}= \pm 2$, then $\rho_{r} \in \widetilde{O}(\Lambda)$.

Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice; then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)<\Gamma_{\xi}<O^{+}(\Lambda) \tag{1.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 1.2.3. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N$. Then:
(1) $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)<\Gamma_{\xi}$ is of index 2 ;

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

(2) $\Gamma_{\xi}=O^{+}(\Lambda)$ unless $N \equiv 6(\bmod 8)$, in which case $\Gamma_{\xi}<O^{+}(\Lambda)$ is of index 3;
(3) if $N$ is odd, $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(O^{+}(\Lambda)\right)=\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)=\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right)$;
(4) if $N$ is even, the map $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right) \rightarrow \mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$ is a double cover.

Proof. The homomorphism $O(\Lambda) \rightarrow O\left(q_{\Lambda}\right)$ is surjective (see e.g. [Nik80, Theorem 1.14.2]). Since the reflection $\rho_{r}$, for $r \in \Lambda$ of square 2 , acts trivially on $A_{\Lambda}$ and does not belong to the index-2 subgroup $O^{+}(\Lambda)$, it follows that the homomorphism $O^{+}(\Lambda) \rightarrow O\left(q_{\Lambda}\right)$ is surjective as well. Since $O\left(q_{\Lambda}\right) \cong \mathbb{Z} / 2$ for $N \not \equiv 6(\bmod 8)$, and $O\left(q_{\Lambda}\right) \cong \Sigma_{3}$ otherwise, Items (1) and (2) follow. Notice that $-1\left(=-\operatorname{id}_{\Lambda}\right) \in \Gamma_{\xi}$ for all $N$, while $-1 \in \widetilde{O}(\Lambda)$ if and only if $N$ is even. It follows that if $N$ is odd, then -1 generates $\Gamma_{\xi} / \widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda) \cong \mathbb{Z} / 2$. Since -1 acts trivially on $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}$, Item (3) follows. Item (4) holds because $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)<\Gamma_{\xi}$ is of index 2 and -1 is the unique non-trivial element of $O^{+}(\Lambda)$ acting trivially on $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$.

### 1.3 Heegner divisors on $D$ locally symmetric varieties

1.3.1 Divisor classes on locally symmetric variety of Type $I V$. Let $X:=\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$ be a locally symmetric variety of Type IV. The Hodge bundle (or automorphic bundle), denoted by $\mathscr{L}(\Lambda, \Gamma)$, is a fundamental fractional (orbifold) line bundle on $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$; it is defined as the quotient of $\mathscr{O}_{\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}}(-1)$ by $\Gamma$, where $\mathscr{O}_{\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}}(-1)$ is the restriction to $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$of the tautological line bundle on $\mathbb{P}\left(\Lambda_{\mathbb{C}}\right)$. We recall that $\mathscr{L}(\Lambda, \Gamma)$ extends to an ample fractional line bundle $\mathscr{L}^{*}(\Lambda, \Gamma)$ on the Baily-Borel compactification $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)^{*}$, and that the sections of $m \mathscr{L}^{*}(\Lambda, \Gamma)$ are precisely the weight- $m \Gamma$-automorphic forms. We let $\lambda(\Lambda, \Gamma):=c_{1}(\mathscr{L}(\Lambda, \Gamma))$; thus, $\lambda(\Lambda, \Gamma)$ is a $\mathbb{Q}$-Cartier divisor class.

As is well known, any Weil divisor $D$ on the quasi-projective variety $X$ is $\mathbb{Q}$-Cartier. Thus, we may identify $\mathrm{CH}^{1}(X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ and $\operatorname{Pic}(X)_{\mathbb{Q}}$.

Heegner divisors on $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$ are defined as follows. Let $\pi: \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$ be the quotient map. Given a non-zero $v \in \Lambda$, we let

$$
\mathscr{H}_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma):=\bigcup_{g \in \Gamma} g(v)^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}, \quad H_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma):=\pi\left(\mathscr{H}_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma)\right) .
$$

Notice that $g(v)^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$is empty if $v^{2} \geqslant 0$; hence, we will always assume that $v^{2}<0$. Then $\mathscr{H}_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma)$ is a (particular) hyperplane arrangement (see [Loo03a, Loo03b]): we call it the preHeegner divisor associated to $v$. One checks that $H_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma)$ is a prime divisor in the quasi-projective variety $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$. We say that $H_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma)$ is the Heegner divisor associated to $v$. Notice that $\mathscr{H}_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma)$ and $H_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma)$ depend only on the $\Gamma$-orbit of $v$. We say that $\mathscr{H}_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma)$ and $H_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma)$ are reflective if the reflection $\rho_{v}$ (see Example 1.2.1) belongs to $\Gamma$ (in particular, $\rho_{v}(\Lambda)=\Lambda$ ). If this is the case, we say that $v$ is a reflective vector of $(\Lambda, \Gamma)$. If $(\Lambda, \xi)$ is a decorated $D$-lattice, and $\Gamma=\Gamma_{\xi}$, then we say that $v$ is a reflective vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$.
1.3.2 Relevant Heegner divisors for $D$ locally symmetric varieties. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice. The Heegner divisors which are relevant for the present work are associated to vectors $v \in \Lambda$ (of negative square) which minimize $\left|v^{2}\right|$ among vectors such that $v^{*}$ equals a given element of $A_{\Lambda}$. It will be convenient to write

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{\Lambda}=\left\{0, \zeta, \xi, \zeta^{\prime}\right\} \tag{1.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
q_{\Lambda}(\zeta)=q_{\Lambda}\left(\zeta^{\prime}\right) \equiv-(N-2) / 4 \quad(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z}) \tag{1.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

always, and

$$
\begin{align*}
2 \zeta=2 \xi=2 \zeta^{\prime}=0 & \text { if } N \text { is even }  \tag{1.3.3}\\
2 \zeta=2 \zeta^{\prime}=\xi \quad & \text { if } N \text { is odd } \tag{1.3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

Remark 1.3.1. With notation as above, there exists $g \in \Gamma_{\xi}$ such that $g(\zeta)=\zeta^{\prime}$. In fact, it suffices to let $g=\left(\operatorname{Id}_{U^{2}}, \rho\right)$, where $\rho \in O^{+}\left(D_{N-2}\right)$ is the reflection in the vector $(2,0, \ldots, 0)$, i.e. $\rho\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{N-2}\right)=\left(-x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{N-2}\right)$.

The result below will be used throughout the paper in order to classify $\Gamma_{\xi}$-orbits of vectors of $\Lambda$.

Proposition 1.3.2 (Eichler's criterion, [GHS09, Proposition 3.3]). Let $\Lambda$ be an even lattice which contains $U \oplus U$. Let $v, w \in \Lambda$ be non-zero and primitive. There exists $g \in \widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$ such that $g(v)=w$ if and only if $v^{2}=w^{2}$ and $v^{*}=w^{*}$.

Proposition 1.3.3. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N$. The following hold.
(1) There exists $v \in \Lambda$ such that $v^{2}=-2$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=1$, and it is unique up to $\Gamma_{\xi}$ (notice that $\left.v^{*}=0\right)$.
(2) There exists $v \in \Lambda$ such that $v^{2}=-4, \operatorname{div}(v)=2$, and $v^{*}=\xi$. Such a $v$ is unique up to $\Gamma_{\xi}$.
(3) Let $a \in\{0, \ldots, 7\}$ be the residue $\bmod 8$ of $N-2$. There exists $v \in \Lambda$ such that:
(3a) $v^{2}=-4 a, \operatorname{div}(v)=4$, and $v^{*}=\zeta\left(\right.$ or $\left.v^{*}=\zeta^{\prime}\right)$ if $N$ is odd;
(3b) $v^{2}=-a, \operatorname{div}(v)=2$, and $v^{*}=\zeta\left(\right.$ or $\left.v^{*}=\zeta^{\prime}\right)$ if $N$ is even.
Such a $v$ is unique up to $\Gamma_{\xi}$ (recall that $\Gamma_{\xi}$ exchanges $\zeta$ and $\zeta^{\prime}$ ).
Proof. (1) and (2): Existence is obvious. Such a $v$ is unique up to $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$ by Eichler's criterion, and hence also up to $\Gamma_{\xi}$, because $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)<\Gamma_{\xi}$. (3): Let us prove existence. Assume first that $N-2 \not \equiv 0(\bmod 8)$ and hence $a \in\{1, \ldots, 7\}$. Let $N-2=8 k+a$; by Remark 1.1.4, we may identify $\Lambda$ with $\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{a}$. If $N$ is odd, the vector $v:=\left(0_{4+8 k},(2, \ldots, 2)\right) \in \Lambda_{N}$ satisfies (3a) and, if $N$ is even, the vector $v:=\left(0_{4+8 k},(1, \ldots, 1)\right) \in \Lambda_{N}$ satisfies $(3 \mathrm{~b})$. If $N-2 \equiv 0(\bmod 8)$, let $N=8 k+2$. Then $\Lambda \cong \mathrm{I}_{1,1+8 k} \oplus U(2)$ by Theorem 1.13 .2 of [Nik80]. With this identification understood, Item (3b) holds for $v:=\left(0_{2+8 k}, e\right) \in \Lambda$, where $e \in U(2)$ is a primitive isotropic vector. Lastly, we prove unicity of $v$ up to $\Gamma_{\xi}$. Let $v_{1}, v_{2}$ be two vectors such that (3a) holds for both, or (3b) holds for both. If $v_{1}^{*}=v_{2}^{*}$, then $v_{1}, v_{2}$ are $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$-equivalent by Eichler's criterion and hence they are $\Gamma_{\xi}$-equivalent because $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)<\Gamma_{\xi}$. If $v_{1}^{*} \neq v_{2}^{*}$, then $\left\{v_{1}^{*}, v_{2}^{*}\right\}=\left\{\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\}$ and hence by Remark 1.3.1 there exists $g \in \Gamma_{\xi}$ such that $g\left(v_{2}\right)^{*}=v_{1}^{*}$; thus, $v_{1}, v_{2}$ are $\Gamma_{\xi}$-equivalent by Eichler's criterion.

Below is a key definition for all that follows.
Definition 1.3.4. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice.
(1) A vector $v \in \Lambda$ is nodal if Item (1) of Proposition 1.3.3 holds. The nodal pre-Heegner divisor and the nodal Heegner divisor are $\mathscr{H}_{v, \Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$ and $H_{v, \Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$, respectively, where $v \in \Lambda$ is a nodal vector. We will denote them by $\mathscr{H}_{n}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and $H_{n}(\Lambda, \xi)$, respectively.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ Surfaces

(2) A vector $v \in \Lambda$ is hyperelliptic if Item (2) of Proposition 1.3.3 holds. The hyperelliptic pre-Heegner divisor and the hyperelliptic Heegner divisor are $\mathscr{H}_{v, \Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$ and $H_{v, \Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$, respectively, where $v \in \Lambda$ is a hyperelliptic vector. We will denote them by $\mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$, respectively.
(3) A vector $v \in \Lambda$ is unigonal if Item (3) of Proposition 1.3.3 holds. The unigonal pre-Heegner divisor and the unigonal Heegner divisor are $\mathscr{H}_{v, \Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$ and $H_{v, \Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$, respectively, where $v \in \Lambda$ is a unigonal vector. We will denote them by $\mathscr{H}_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$, respectively. Notice that if $N \equiv 2(\bmod 8)$, then $\mathscr{H}_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)=0$ and $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)=0$ because $v^{2}=0$.
(The definition makes sense because by Proposition 1.3.3 there is a single $\Gamma_{\xi}$-orbit of nodal, hyperelliptic, or unigonal vectors.)

### 1.3.3 Reflective Heegner divisors and the boundary of $D$ period spaces.

Proposition 1.3.5. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a dimension- $N$ decorated $D$-lattice. Let $v \in \Lambda$ be primitive, of negative square, i.e. $v^{2}<0$. The reflection $\rho_{v}$ (see (1.2.1)) belongs to $\Gamma_{\xi}$ (i.e. $v$ is a reflective vector of $(\Lambda, \xi))$ if and only if $v$ is either nodal or hyperelliptic, or $N \equiv 3,4(\bmod 8)$ and $v$ is unigonal.

Proof. Assume that $\rho_{v}$ belongs to $\Gamma_{\xi}$. Since $\rho_{v}(\Lambda)=\Lambda$, it follows that $v^{2} \mid 2 \operatorname{div}(v)$ (see Example 1.2.1). On the other hand, $A_{\Lambda}$ is isomorphic to $\mathbb{Z} /(4)$ if $N$ is odd and to the Klein group if $N$ is even. Thus, one of the following holds:
(a) $v^{2}=-2$ and $\operatorname{div}(v) \in\{1,2,4\}$;
(b) $v^{2}=-4$ and $\operatorname{div}(v) \in\{2,4\}$;
(c) $v^{2}=-8$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=4$.

Suppose that Item (a) holds. If $\operatorname{div}(v)=1$, then $v$ is nodal. Thus, $\rho_{v} \in \widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$ by Example 1.2.1 and hence $\rho_{v} \in \Gamma_{\xi}$. If $\operatorname{div}(v)=2$, then $q_{\Lambda}\left(v^{*}\right) \equiv-1 / 2(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$. By (1.1.4), Claim 1.1.1, and (1.1.2), it follows that $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$, and $v$ is unigonal. In particular, $\Gamma_{\xi}=O^{+}(\Lambda)$ by Proposition 1.2.3 and hence $\rho_{v} \in \Gamma_{\xi}$ because $\rho_{v} \in O^{+}(\Lambda)$. If $\operatorname{div}(v)=4$, then $q_{\Lambda}\left(v^{*}\right) \equiv-1 / 8$ $(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$. On the other hand, $N$ is odd $\operatorname{because} \operatorname{div}(v)=4$ and hence by (1.1.4), Claim 1.1.1, and (1.1.2), it follows that $-(N-2) / 4 \equiv-1 / 8(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$, which is absurd. Thus, the case $v^{2}=-2$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=4$ does not occur.

Now suppose that Item (b) holds. If $\operatorname{div}(v)=2$, then either $v$ is hyperelliptic or $N \equiv 6$ $(\bmod 8)$. If $v$ is hyperelliptic, then $\rho_{v} \in O^{+}(\Lambda)$ by Example 1.2.1. Since $\rho_{v}(v)=-v$ and $\xi=v^{*}$, the reflection $\rho_{v}$ fixes the 2 -torsion element $\xi$ and hence belongs to $\Gamma_{\xi}$. If, on the other hand, $N \equiv 6(\bmod 8)$ and $v$ is not hyperelliptic, we may assume that $v^{*}=\zeta$. Then $\rho_{v}(\xi)=\zeta^{\prime}$ (let $N=8 k+6$, so that $\Lambda \cong \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{4}$, and compute) and hence $\rho_{v} \notin \Gamma_{\xi}$. If $\operatorname{div}(v)=4$, then $q_{\Lambda}\left(v^{*}\right) \equiv-1 / 4(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$. By (1.1.4), Claim 1.1.1, and (1.1.2), it follows that $N \equiv 3(\bmod 8)$, and $v$ is unigonal. Then $\Gamma_{\xi}=O^{+}(\Lambda)$ by Proposition 1.2.3 and hence $\rho_{v} \in \Gamma_{\xi}$ because $\rho_{v} \in O^{+}(\Lambda)$.

Lastly, let us show that Item (c) cannot hold. In fact, $q_{\Lambda}\left(v^{*}\right) \equiv-1 / 2(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$, and $N$ is odd because $\operatorname{div}(v)=4$; by (1.1.4), Claim 1.1.1, and (1.1.2), it follows that $-(N-2) / 4 \equiv-1 / 2$ $(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$, which is absurd.

The following definition of the boundary divisor $\Delta$ is motivated by the discussion of $\S 4$.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Definition 1.3.6. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N$. Let $\Delta(\Lambda, \xi)$ be the $\mathbb{Q}$ Cartier divisor on $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ defined as

$$
\Delta(\Lambda, \xi):=\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi) / 2 & \text { if } N \not \equiv 3,4 & (\bmod 8)  \tag{1.3.5}\\
\left(H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)+H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)\right) / 2 & \text { if } N \equiv 3,4 & (\bmod 8)
\end{array}\right.
$$

1.3.4 Heegner divisors for the stable orthogonal group. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a dimension- $N$ decorated $D$-lattice. The main object of study in this paper is the geometry of the locally symmetric variety $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$. (The reason for this is the inductive behavior described in § 1.7.) It is more standard to discard the decoration $\xi$ and consider $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right)$, the variety associated to the stable orthogonal group. If $N$ is odd, $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right) \cong \mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$ and there is nothing to be said. On the other hand, if $N$ is even, then $\Gamma_{\xi}$ is an index-2 subgroup of $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$ (see Proposition 1.2.3) and hence we have a double cover map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right) \xrightarrow{\rho} \mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right) . \tag{1.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will describe the inverse image by $\rho$ of the Heegner divisors $H_{n}, H_{h}$, and $H_{u}$.
Definition 1.3.7. Let $\Lambda$ be a dimension- $N$ D-lattice. A minimal norm vector of $\Lambda$ is a $v \in \Lambda$ such that one of the following holds:
(1) $v^{2}=-2$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=1$; or
(2) $v^{2}=-4$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=2$; or
(3) $(N-2) \not \equiv 0(\bmod 8)$ and, letting $a$ be the residue of $(N-2)$ modulo 8:
(3a) $v^{2}=-4 a$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=4$ if $N$ is odd; or else
(3b) $v^{2}=-a$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=2$ if $N$ is even.
Remark 1.3.8. Given $\eta \in A_{\Lambda}$, there exists a minimal norm vector $v \in \Lambda$ such that $v^{*}=\eta$ and, by Eichler's criterion (Proposition 1.3.2) the set of such minimal norm vectors is a single $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$-orbit. If $u \in \Lambda$ is another vector such that $u^{2}<0$ and $u^{*}=\eta$, then $u^{2} \leqslant v^{2}$; this is the reason for our choice of terminology.

Definition 1.3.9. Let $\Lambda$ be a dimension- $N D$-lattice and $\eta \in A_{\Lambda}$. We let

$$
\mathscr{H}_{\eta}(\Lambda):=\mathscr{H}_{v, \Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right), \quad H_{\eta}(\Lambda):=H_{v, \Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right)
$$

where $v \in \Lambda$ is any minimal norm vector such that $v^{*}=\eta$. (The definition makes sense by Remark 1.3.8.)

Remark 1.3.10. Let $\Lambda$ be a dimension- $N D$-lattice with $N$ odd. Choose a decoration $\xi$ of $\Lambda$ and let $A_{\Lambda}=\left\{\xi, \zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\}$, as usual. Then, under the identification $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right) \cong \mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$, we have $H_{0}(\Lambda)=H_{n}(\Lambda, \xi), H_{\xi}(\Lambda)=H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$, and $H_{\zeta}(\Lambda)=H_{\zeta^{\prime}}(\Lambda)=H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$ (notice that $\zeta^{\prime}=-\zeta$ because $N$ is odd).

Proposition 1.3.11. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a dimension- $N$ decorated $D$-lattice and assume that $N$ is even. Let $\rho$ be the double covering in (1.3.6). Then (notation as in Remark 1.3.10)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho^{*} H_{n}(\Lambda, \xi)=H_{0}(\Lambda), \quad \rho^{*} H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)=2 H_{\xi}(\Lambda), \quad \rho^{*} H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)=H_{\zeta}(\Lambda)+H_{\zeta^{\prime}}(\Lambda) . \tag{1.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Proof. Let $v$ be a hyperelliptic vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$ and let $\rho_{v}$ be the associated reflection. Then $\rho_{v} \in \Gamma_{\xi}$, but $\rho_{v} \notin \widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$ (see Remark 1.3.1). Thus, the class of $\rho_{v}$ in $\Gamma_{\xi} / \widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$ is the covering involution of $\rho$. One may choose a nodal vector $w$ of $(\Lambda, \xi)$ which is orthogonal to $v$. Then $\rho_{v}$ acts non-trivially on $w^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$; it follows that the covering involution of $\rho$ maps $H_{0}(\Lambda)$ to itself and is not the identity. The first equality of (1.3.7) follows from this. On the other hand, $\rho_{v}$ acts trivially on $v^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$and the second equality of (1.3.7) follows. Lastly, $\rho_{v}$ switches the vectors $\zeta$ and $\zeta^{\prime}$ in $A_{\Lambda}$ (cf. Remark 1.3.1) and this proves the third equality of (1.3.7).

Applying $\rho_{*}$ to the equalities in (1.3.7), we get the following result.
Corollary 1.3.12. Keep assumptions as in Proposition 1.3.11. Then

$$
\rho_{*} H_{0}(\Lambda)=2 H_{n}(\Lambda, \xi), \quad \rho_{*} H_{\xi}(\Lambda)=H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi), \quad \rho_{*}\left(H_{\zeta}(\Lambda)+H_{\zeta^{\prime}}(\Lambda)\right)=2 H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)
$$

Below is the last result of the present subsection.
Claim 1.3.13. Let $\Lambda$ be a $D$-lattice. Choose a decoration $\xi$ of $\Lambda$ and let $A_{\Lambda}=\left\{\xi, \zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\}$, as usual. Then, with respect to the group $\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)$, the following hold:
(1) $H_{0}(\Lambda)$ is a reflective Heegner divisor;
(2) $H_{\xi}(\Lambda)$ is reflective if and only if $N$ is odd;
(3) $H_{\zeta}(\Lambda)$ is reflective if and only if $N \equiv 3,4(\bmod 8)$, and similarly for $H_{\zeta^{\prime}}(\Lambda)$.

Proof. If $N$ is odd, the result follows from Proposition 1.3.5 because $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right)=\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}\left(\Gamma_{\xi}\right)$. Suppose that $N$ is even. Item (1) holds because the reflection associated to $v \in \Lambda$ with $v^{2}=-2$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=1$ belongs to $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$. On the other hand, as noted above, if $v$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$, then $\pm \rho_{v} \notin \widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$ and Item (2) follows. In order to prove Item (3), let $\rho$ be the double covering in (1.3.6). If $H_{\zeta}(\Lambda)$ is reflective, then $\rho_{*}$ is reflective as well and hence $N \equiv 3,4$ $(\bmod 8)$ by Proposition 1.3.5. On the other hand, one easily checks that if $N \equiv 3,4(\bmod 8)$, the reflection associated to a unigonal vector is in $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$.

### 1.4 Hyperelliptic Heegner divisors

We will prove that the hyperelliptic Heegner divisor $H_{h}\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ is isomorphic to $\mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$.
Lemma 1.4.1. Let $N \geqslant 4$, let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a dimension- $N$ decorated $D$-lattice, and let $v \in \Lambda$ be a hyperelliptic vector. Then $v^{\perp}$ is a dimension- $(N-1) D$-lattice.

Proof. We may assume that $\Lambda=\Lambda_{N}=U^{2} \oplus D_{N-2}$. By Eichler's criterion, i.e. Proposition 1.3.2, any two vectors of $\Lambda_{N}$ of square -4 and divisibility 2 are $O^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)$-equivalent. Thus, we may suppose that $v=(\mathbf{0},(0, \ldots, 0,2))$; it is obvious that $v^{\perp} \cong \Lambda_{N-1}$.

Remark 1.4.2. Let $N \geqslant 4$, let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a dimension- $N$ decorated $D$-lattice, and let $v \in \Lambda$ be hyperelliptic. The $D$-lattice $v^{\perp}$ comes with a decoration. In fact, since $v^{2}=-4$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=2$, the sublattice $\langle v\rangle \oplus v^{\perp}$ has index 2 in $\Lambda$. Thus, there exists $w \in v^{\perp}$, well determined modulo $2 v^{\perp}$, such that $(v+w) / 2$ is contained in $\Lambda$. It follows that $\left(w / 2, v^{\perp}\right) \subset \mathbb{Z}$ and hence $w / 2$ represents an element $\eta \in A_{v^{\perp}}$, independent of the choice of $w$. Moreover, $q_{v^{\perp}}(\eta) \equiv 1(\bmod 2)$ because

$$
-1+(w / 2)^{2}=(v / 2)^{2}+(w / 2)^{2}=((v+w) / 2)^{2} \equiv 0 \quad(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z}) .
$$

Thus, $\left(v^{\perp}, \eta\right)$ is a dimension- $(N-1)$ decorated $D$-lattice.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Proposition 1.4.3. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a dimension- $N$ decorated $D$-lattice and $v \in \Lambda$ be a hyperelliptic vector. Let $\eta$ be the decoration of the dimension- $(N-1) D$-lattice $v^{\perp}$ defined above. If $g \in \Gamma_{\eta}$, then there exists a unique $\widetilde{g} \in \Gamma_{\xi}$ which fixes $v$ and restricts to $g$ on $v^{\perp}$.

Proof. Unicity of $\widetilde{g}$ is obvious; we must prove existence. Let $\widehat{g} \in O\left(\Lambda_{\mathbb{Q}}\right)$ be the extension of $g$ which maps $v$ to itself. There exists $u \in v^{\perp}$ such that $\widehat{g}(w / 2)=w / 2+u$ because $g \in \Gamma_{\eta}$ (i.e. $g[w / 2]=[w / 2])$. Hence, $\widehat{g}((v+w) / 2)=(v+w) / 2+u \in \Lambda$ and this proves that $\widehat{g}(\Lambda) \subset \Lambda$. We set $\widetilde{g}:=\left.\widehat{g}\right|_{\Lambda}$. Then $\widetilde{g} \in O(\Lambda), \widetilde{g}(v)=v$, and $\left.\widetilde{g}\right|_{v^{\perp}}=g$. Since $\xi=[v / 2]$, the isometry $\widetilde{g}$ fixes $\xi$ and moreover $\widetilde{g} \in O^{+}(\Lambda)$ because $g \in O^{+}\left(v^{\perp}\right)$; this proves that $\widetilde{g} \in \Gamma_{\xi}$.

By Proposition 1.4.3, we have an injection of groups

$$
\begin{array}{ccc}
\Gamma_{\eta} & \hookrightarrow & \Gamma_{\xi}  \tag{1.4.1}\\
g & \mapsto & \tilde{g} .
\end{array}
$$

The following is immediate.
Claim 1.4.4. The injective homomorphism of (1.4.1) has image equal to the stabilizer $\operatorname{Stab}(v)<\Gamma_{\xi}$ of $v$.

Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice and $v \in \Lambda$ be a hyperelliptic vector. Let $\Lambda^{\prime}:=v^{\perp}$ (a $D$-lattice) and $\xi^{\prime}$ be the associated decoration of $\Lambda^{\prime}$. We have defined an injection $\Gamma_{\xi^{\prime}} \hookrightarrow \Gamma_{\xi}$, see (1.4.1), and hence there is a well-defined regular map of quasi-projective varieties

$$
\begin{array}{ccc}
\mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda^{\prime}, \xi^{\prime}\right) & \xrightarrow{f} & H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)  \tag{1.4.2}\\
\Gamma_{\xi^{\prime}}[\sigma] & \mapsto & \Gamma_{\xi}[\sigma] .
\end{array}
$$

Below is the main result of the present subsection.
Proposition 1.4.5. The map $f$ of (1.4.2) is an isomorphism onto the hyperelliptic Heegner divisor $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$. Moreover, the intersection of $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and the singular locus of $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ has codimension at least two in $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$.

We will prove Proposition 1.4.5 at the end of the present subsubsection. First, we will go through a series of preliminary results.

Proposition 1.4.6. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a dimension- $N$ decorated $D$-lattice. Let $v \in \Lambda$ be a hyperelliptic vector and let $\eta$ be the decoration of the dimension- $(N-1) D$-lattice $v^{\perp}$ defined above. Suppose that $w$ is a reflective vector of $\left(v^{\perp}, \eta\right)$. Then $w$ is a reflective vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$ as well. More precisely:
(1) if $w$ is a nodal vector of $\left(v^{\perp}, \eta\right)$, then it is a nodal vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$;
(2) if $w$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $\left(v^{\perp}, \eta\right)$, then it is a hyperelliptic vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$;
(3) if $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$ and $w$ is a unigonal (reflective) vector of $\left(v^{\perp}, \eta\right)$, then it is a hyperelliptic vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$;
(4) if $N \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$ and $w$ is a unigonal (reflective) vector of $\left(v^{\perp}, \eta\right)$, then it is a nodal vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ Surfaces

Proof. (1): Trivial. (2): We may assume that $\Lambda=U^{2} \oplus D_{N-2}$ and

$$
v=\left(0_{4},(0, \ldots, 0,2)\right) .
$$

By Propositions 1.4.3 and 1.3.3, we may assume that $w=\left(0_{4},(0, \ldots, 0,2,0)\right)$, and (2) follows. (3): Let $N=4+8 k$, where $k \geqslant 0$. We may assume that $\Lambda=\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{2}$ and $v=\left(0_{4+8 k},(0,2)\right)$. By Propositions 1.4.3 and 1.3.3, we may assume that $w=\left(0_{4+8 k},(2,0)\right)$, and (3) follows. (4): Let $N=5+8 k$, where $k \geqslant 0$. We may assume that $\Lambda=\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{3}$ and $v=\left(0_{4+8 k},(0,0,2)\right)$. By Propositions 1.4.3 and 1.3.3, we may assume that $w=\left(0_{4+8 k},(1,-1,0)\right)$, and (4) follows.

Let $\Lambda$ be a lattice (any lattice, not necessarily a $D$-lattice) and $\Omega \subset \Lambda$ a subgroup. We let $\bar{\Omega} \subset \Lambda$ be the saturation of $\Omega$, i.e. the subgroup of vectors $v \in \Lambda$ such that $m v \in \Omega$ for some $0 \neq m \in \mathbb{Z}$.

Lemma 1.4.7. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice and $v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k} \in \Lambda$. Suppose that the following hold:
(1) $v_{i}$ is a hyperelliptic vector for $i \in\{1, \ldots, k\}$;
(2) if $i \neq j \in\{1, \ldots, k\}$, then $v_{i} \neq \pm v_{j}$;
(3) the sublattice $\Omega \subset \Lambda$ generated by $v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k}$ is negative definite.

Then the following hold.
(I) The formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
F\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k}\right)=\frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^{k} x_{i} v_{i} \tag{1.4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

defines an isomorphism of lattices $F: D_{k} \xrightarrow{\sim} \bar{\Omega}$. (In particular, $v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k}$ are pairwise orthogonal.)
(II) A vector $v \in \bar{\Omega}$ is hyperelliptic if and only if $v= \pm v_{i}$ for some $i \in\{1, \ldots, k\}$.

Proof. Let $u, w \in \bar{\Omega}$ be hyperelliptic vectors such that $u \neq \pm w$. Using the divisibility assumptions and that $\Omega$ is negative definite, it is easy to see that $(u, w)=0$. Thus, $\left(v_{i}, v_{j}\right)=0$ for $i, j \in$ $\{1, \ldots, k\}$ and hence $\Omega$ has rank $k$. The vector $\left(\sum_{i=1}^{k} x_{i} v_{i}\right) / 2$ belongs to $\bar{\Omega}$ whenever $\sum_{i=1}^{k} x_{i}$ is even because $\left(v_{i}+v_{j}\right) / 2 \in \bar{\Omega}$. It follows that (1.4.3) defines an isomorphism between $D_{k}$ and the sublattice $F\left(D_{k}\right) \subset \bar{\Omega}$. Suppose that $F\left(D_{k}\right) \neq \bar{\Omega}$; since $\operatorname{det}\left(D_{k}\right)=(-1)^{k} 4$, it follows that $\bar{\Omega}$ is unimodular and that contradicts the hypothesis that each $v_{i}$ has divisibility 2 . Thus, $F\left(D_{k}\right)=\bar{\Omega}$ and this proves Item (I). Item (II) is similar.

Proposition 1.4.8. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated D-lattice. The hyperelliptic Heegner divisor $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is normal.

Proof. By definition, $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)=\Gamma_{\xi} \backslash \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$. Let $p \in H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and $[\sigma] \in \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a representative of $p$. Let $\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma])<\Gamma_{\xi}$ be the stabilizer of the line $[\sigma]$. By construction, we have the following isomorphisms of analytic germs:

$$
\begin{align*}
(\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi), p) & \cong\left(\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma]) \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}, \overline{[\sigma]}\right),  \tag{1.4.4}\\
\left(H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi), p\right) & \cong\left(\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma]) \backslash \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi), \overline{[\sigma]}\right) . \tag{1.4.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Since $\sigma^{\perp} \cap \Lambda_{\mathbb{R}}$ is negative definite, the set of hyperelliptic vectors $v \in \sigma^{\perp} \cap \Lambda$ is finite (and non-empty). Let $\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k}\right\}$ be a maximal collection of such vectors with the property that

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

$v_{i} \neq \pm v_{j}$ for $i \neq j$. Let $\Omega_{\sigma} \subset \Lambda$ be the subgroup generated by $v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k}$. As noticed above, the restriction of the quadratic form to $\Omega_{\sigma}$ is negative definite. Thus, the hypotheses of Lemma 1.4.7 are satisfied and hence the saturation $\bar{\Omega}_{\sigma}$ is isomorphic (as a lattice) to $D_{k}$. (Notice that by Lemma 1.4.7, $\Omega_{\sigma}$ is independent of the choice of a maximal collection as above.) Let $R_{\sigma}^{\prime}$ be the set of $r \in \bar{\Omega}_{\sigma}$ such that $r^{2}=-2$ and let $R_{\sigma}^{\prime \prime}$ be the set of hyperelliptic vectors of $\bar{\Omega}_{\sigma}$. Then

$$
R_{\sigma}^{\prime}=\left\{\left((-1)^{m_{i}} v_{i}+(-1)^{m_{j}} v_{j}\right) / 2 \mid 1 \leqslant i<j \leqslant k\right\}, \quad R_{\sigma}^{\prime \prime}=\left\{(-1)^{m_{i}} v_{i} \mid 1 \leqslant i \leqslant k\right\} .
$$

(The last equality holds by Lemma 1.4.7.) Let $R_{\sigma}:=R_{\sigma}^{\prime} \cup R_{\sigma}^{\prime \prime}$. Notice that $\rho_{r} \in \Gamma_{\xi}$ for all $r \in R_{\sigma}$. Let $W_{\sigma}, W_{\sigma}^{\prime}, W_{\sigma}^{\prime \prime}<\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma])$ be the subgroups generated by the reflections $\rho_{r}$ for $r \in R_{\sigma}, r \in R_{\sigma}^{\prime}$, and $r \in R_{\sigma}^{\prime \prime}$, respectively. Clearly, $W_{\sigma}$ is a normal subgroup of $\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma])$; let $G_{\sigma}:=\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma]) / W_{\sigma}$. Then $G_{\sigma}$ acts on $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$and on $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$. The analytic germ $\left(\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma]) \backslash \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi), \overline{[\sigma]}\right)$ is isomorphic to the germ at $[\sigma]$ of $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ modulo the action of $G_{\sigma}$. Hence, it suffices to prove that $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is smooth in a neighborhood of $\overline{[\sigma]}$.

We identify each $r \in R_{\sigma}$ with $F^{-1}(r) \in \mathbb{C}^{k}$, where $F$ is the isometry of (1.4.3), and we denote it by $r$. Thus, $r \in R_{\sigma}^{\prime}, r \in R_{\sigma}^{\prime \prime}$ are of the form

$$
(0, \ldots, 0, \pm 1,0, \ldots, 0, \pm 1,0, \ldots, 0), \quad(0, \ldots, 0, \pm 2,0, \ldots, 0)
$$

respectively. The action of $W_{\sigma}$ is trivial on $\Omega_{\sigma}^{\perp}$. It follows that there exist local analytic coordinates $(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{t})=\left(\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{k}\right), \mathbf{t}\right)$ on $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$, centered at $[\sigma]$, such that $x_{i}=0$ is a local equation of $v_{i}^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$, and

$$
\rho_{r}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{t})=\left(\mathbf{x}-\frac{2(\mathbf{x}, r)}{r^{2}} r, \mathbf{t}\right)
$$

where $(\mathbf{x}, r)$ is the opposite of the standard Euclidean product of $\mathbf{x}$ and $r$.
In order to describe $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$and $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$, we first take the quotient by the normal subgroup $W_{\sigma}^{\prime \prime}$ and then we act by $W_{\sigma}^{\prime} / W_{\sigma}^{\prime \prime}$ on the quotient. Local analytic coordinates on $W_{\sigma}^{\prime \prime} \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$are $\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{k}, \mathbf{t}\right)$, where $y_{i}=x_{i}^{2}$. The action of $W_{\sigma}^{\prime} / W_{\sigma}^{\prime \prime}$ on $\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{k}\right)$ is the standard representation of the symmetric group $\mathscr{S}_{k}$. Thus, local analytic coordinates on $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$are $\left(\tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{k}, \mathbf{t}\right)$, where $\tau_{i}$ is the degree- $i$ elementary symmetric function in $y_{1}, \ldots, y_{k}$. In particular, $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$is smooth in a neighborhood of $\overline{[\sigma]}$. Since a local equation of $\mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is given by $x_{1} \cdots x_{k}=0$, a local equation of $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ in $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$is $\tau_{k}=0$. We have proved that $W_{\sigma} \backslash \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is smooth in a neighborhood of $[\overline{[\sigma]}$, as claimed.

Proof of Proposition 1.4.5. We adopt the notation introduced in the proof of Proposition 1.4.8. We start by noting that $f$ is surjective by definition. The composition of $f$ and the inclusion $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi) \hookrightarrow \mathscr{F}^{*}(\Lambda, \xi)$ extends to a regular map

$$
\varphi: \mathscr{F}^{*}\left(\Lambda^{\prime}, \xi^{\prime}\right) \longrightarrow \mathscr{F}^{*}(\Lambda, \xi)
$$

compatible with the Baily-Borel boundaries. Since the Baily-Borel compactifications are projective, it follows that $f$ is a projective map. By Claim 1.4.4, the fiber of $f$ at the equivalence class represented by $\sigma \in \mathscr{H}_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is identified with the set of hyperelliptic vectors $v \in \Omega_{\sigma}$, modulo the action of $\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma])$ (notice that $-\operatorname{Id}_{\Lambda} \in \operatorname{Stab}([\sigma])$ ). Hence, the proof of Proposition 1.4.8 shows that the fiber of $f$ is a singleton; in particular, $f$ is birational. Now $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is normal by Proposition 1.4.8; since $f$ is birational and projective, it follows that it is an isomorphism.

It remains to prove that the intersection of $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and the singular locus of $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ has codimension at least 2 in $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$. Suppose the contrary: we will reach a contradiction.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Since $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is normal, there is an irreducible component $Z$ of $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi) \cap \operatorname{sing} \mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ which has codimension 1 in $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$. Let $v \in \Lambda$ be a hyperelliptic vector and $\eta$ the decoration of the $D$-lattice $v^{\perp}$ associated to $\xi$. Let $\pi: \mathscr{D}_{v^{\perp}}^{+} \longrightarrow H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$ be the natural map; we have proved that $\pi$ is the quotient map for the action of $\Gamma_{\eta}$ on $\mathscr{D}_{v^{\perp}}^{+}$. Now let $\widetilde{Z} \subset \mathscr{D}_{v^{\perp}}^{+}$be an irreducible component of $\pi^{-1} Z$. If $[\sigma] \in \widetilde{Z}$, then

$$
\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma]) \supsetneq\left\langle\rho_{v},-1_{\Lambda}\right\rangle
$$

because $\pi([\sigma])$ is a singular point of $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$. We distinguish between the two cases.
(1) For very general $[\sigma] \in \widetilde{Z}$, the set of hyperelliptic vectors in $\sigma^{\perp}$ is $\{v,-v\}$.
(2) For very general $[\sigma] \in \widetilde{Z}$, the set of hyperelliptic vectors in $\sigma^{\perp}$ has cardinality strictly greater than 2.
Assume that (1) holds and let $[\sigma] \in \widetilde{Z}$ be very general. Let $g \in\left(\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma]) \backslash\left\langle\rho_{v},-1_{\Lambda}\right\rangle\right)$. Then $g(v)=$ $\pm v$ and hence, multiplying $g$ by $\rho_{v}$ if necessary, we may assume that $g(v)=v$, i.e. $\left.g\right|_{v^{\perp}} \in \Gamma_{\eta}$. Now $\left.g\right|_{v^{\perp}}$ fixes every point of $\widetilde{Z}$, which has codimension 1 in $\mathscr{D}_{v^{\perp}}^{+}$. It follows that $\left.g\right|_{v^{\perp}}= \pm \rho_{w}^{v^{\perp}}$, where $w$ is a reflective vector of $\left(v^{\perp}, \eta\right)$ and $\rho_{w}^{v^{\perp}}$ denotes the associated reflection of $v^{\perp}$. By Proposition 1.4.6, the vector $w$ is a reflective vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$ as well; it follows that $g=\rho_{w}$. Thus, $\widetilde{Z}=v^{\perp} \cap w^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$and hence $\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma])=\left\langle\rho_{v}, \rho_{w},-1_{\Lambda}\right\rangle$ for a very general $[\sigma] \in \widetilde{Z}$. It follows that if $[\sigma] \in \widetilde{Z}$ is very general, then $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is smooth at $\pi([\sigma])$, and that contradicts our assumption.

Lastly, assume that (2) holds. Let $[\sigma] \in \widetilde{Z}$ be very general. Since $\widetilde{Z}$ has codimension 2 in $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$, the set of hyperelliptic vectors in $\sigma^{\perp}$ is equal to $\left\{ \pm v_{1}, \pm v_{2}\right\}$, where $v_{1}, v_{2}$ are orthogonal hyperelliptic vectors, and moreover $\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma])=\left\langle\rho_{v_{1}}, \rho_{v_{2}},-1_{\Lambda}\right\rangle$. As shown in the proof of Proposition 1.4.8, it follows that $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is smooth at $\pi([\sigma])$, and that contradicts our assumption.

### 1.5 Reflective unigonal divisors

1.5.1 $N \equiv 3(\bmod 8)$. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N \equiv 3(\bmod 8)$. Let $N=8 k+3$, where $k \geqslant 0$. Let $v \in \Lambda$ be a unigonal vector, i.e. $v^{2}=-4$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=4$. Then $\Lambda=\langle v\rangle \oplus v^{\perp}$. Since $\operatorname{det} \Lambda=-4$, it follows that $v^{\perp}$ is unimodular. Thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
v^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \tag{1.5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Given $g \in O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)$, let $\widetilde{g} \in O(\Lambda)$ be the isometry such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{g}(v)=v,\left.\quad \widetilde{g}\right|_{v^{\perp}}=g . \tag{1.5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\widetilde{g} \in O^{+}(\Lambda)$ because $g \in O^{+}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}\right)$, and $\widetilde{g} \in \widetilde{O}(\Lambda)$ because $A_{\Lambda}$ is generated by $v^{*}$. Thus, we have an injection of groups

$$
\begin{align*}
& O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right) \hookrightarrow \Gamma_{\xi}  \tag{1.5.3}\\
& g \mapsto \\
& g
\end{align*}
$$

It follows that the injection $\mathscr{D}_{v^{\perp}}^{+} \hookrightarrow \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$descends to a regular map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}_{I \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}}\left(O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)\right) \xrightarrow{l} H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi) . \tag{1.5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 1.5.1. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N \equiv 3(\bmod 8)$ and let $N=8 k+3$, where $k \geqslant 0$. The map $l$ in (1.5.4) is an isomorphism onto the unigonal Heegner divisor $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$. Moreover, the intersection of $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and the singular locus of $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ has codimension at least 2 in $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Proof. The map $l$ is finite (see the proof of Proposition 1.4.5) and it has degree 1 because $-\mathrm{Id}_{\Lambda} \in \Gamma_{\xi}$. Thus, in order to prove that $l$ is an isomorphism, it suffices to prove that $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is normal. We claim that the pre-Heegner divisor $\mathscr{H}_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is smooth, i.e. that if $v_{1}, v_{2}$ are non-proportional unigonal vectors, then $v_{1}^{\perp} \cap v_{2}^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}=\emptyset$. In fact, suppose the contrary. Then $v_{1}, v_{2}$ span a negative-definite rank-2 sublattice of $\Lambda$; since $v_{i}^{2}=-4$ and $\left(v_{1}, v_{2}\right) \in 4 \mathbb{Z}$, it follows that $v_{1} \perp v_{2}$. On the other hand, $v_{1}^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}$ by (1.5.1) and hence $v_{1}^{\perp}$ does not contain a primitive vector of divisibility greater than 1 . This proves that $\mathscr{H}_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is smooth and hence $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)=\Gamma_{\xi} \backslash \mathscr{H}_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is normal.

The proof that $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi) \cap \operatorname{sing} \mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ has codimension at least 2 in $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is similar to the analogous statement for $H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi)$; see Proposition 1.4.5. We leave details to the reader.

In order to simplify notation, from now on we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right):=\mathscr{F}_{\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}}\left(O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)\right) . \tag{1.5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

A vector $v \in \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}$ is nodal if it has square - 2 . By Eichler's criterion, i.e. Proposition 1.3.2, any two nodal vectors of $\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}$ are $O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)$-equivalent. We let $H_{n}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)$ be the Heegner divisor of $\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)$ corresponding to a nodal $v \in \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}$.
1.5.2 $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$. Let $N=8 k+4$, where $k \geqslant 0$. Let $v \in \Lambda$ be a unigonal vector, i.e. $v^{2}=-2$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=2$. Then $\Lambda=\langle v\rangle \oplus v^{\perp}$. Moreover,

$$
\begin{equation*}
v^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1} \tag{1.5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

In fact, $A_{\Lambda}=\mathbb{Z} /(2) \oplus A_{v^{\perp}}$, where a generator of the first summand has square $-1 / 2$ modulo $2 \mathbb{Z}$. It follows that the discriminant group of $v^{\perp}$ is $\mathbb{Z} /(2)$ and a generator has square $-1 / 2$ modulo $2 \mathbb{Z}$. Thus, $v^{\perp}$ and $U^{2} \oplus E_{8}^{k} \oplus A_{1}$ have the same signature and isomorphic discriminant groups; thus, (1.5.6) follows from Theorem 1.13 .2 of [Nik80]. Given $g \in O^{+}\left(v^{\perp}\right)$, let $\widetilde{g} \in O(\Lambda)$ be the isometry such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{g}(v)=v,\left.\quad \widetilde{g}\right|_{v^{\perp}}=g . \tag{1.5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\widetilde{g} \in O^{+}(\Lambda)$ because $g \in O^{+}\left(v^{\perp}\right)$, and $\widetilde{g} \in \widetilde{O}(\Lambda)$ because $O\left(v^{\perp}\right)=\widetilde{O}\left(v^{\perp}\right)$, and $A_{\Lambda}=$ $A_{v^{\perp}} \oplus\left\langle v^{*}\right\rangle$. Thus, we have an injection of groups

$$
\begin{align*}
& O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right) \hookrightarrow  \tag{1.5.8}\\
& g \mapsto \\
& \Gamma_{\xi} \\
& \hline
\end{align*}
$$

It follows that the injection $\mathscr{D}_{v^{\perp}}^{+} \hookrightarrow \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$descends to a regular map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}_{\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}}\left(O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)\right) \xrightarrow{m} H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi) . \tag{1.5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 1.5.2. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$ and let $N=8 k+4$, where $k \geqslant 0$. The map $m$ in (1.5.9) is an isomorphism onto the unigonal Heegner divisor $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$. Moreover, the intersection of $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and the singular locus of $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ has codimension at least 2 in $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$.

Proof. The proof is similar to the proof of Proposition 1.5.1 (see also Proposition 1.4.5). We leave details to the reader.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ Surfaces

In order to simplify notation, from now on we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right):=\mathscr{F}_{I I_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}}\left(O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)\right) . \tag{1.5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

A vector $v \in \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}$ is nodal if it has square -2 and divisibility 1 ; it is unigonal if it has square -2 and divisibility 2. By Eichler's criterion, i.e. Proposition 1.3.2, any two nodal vectors of $\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}$ are $O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)$-equivalent, and similarly for any two unigonal vectors. We let $H_{n}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)$ and $H_{u}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)$ be the Heegner divisors of $\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)$ corresponding to a nodal or a unigonal $v \in \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}$, respectively.

One describes the Heegner divisor $H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)$ proceeding as in $\S$ 1.5.1. In fact, let $v \in\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)$ be a unigonal vector. Then $\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)=\langle v\rangle \oplus v^{\perp}$, and $v^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}$ is unimodular. It follows that the injection $\mathscr{D}_{v^{\perp}}^{+} \hookrightarrow \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$descends to a regular map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right) \xrightarrow{p} H_{u}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right), \tag{1.5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which satisfies the following proposition.
Proposition 1.5.3. Let $k \geqslant 0$. The map $p$ of (1.5.11) is an isomorphism onto the unigonal Heegner divisor $H_{u}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)$. Moreover, the intersection of $H_{u}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)$ and the singular locus of $\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)$ has codimension at least 2 in $H_{u}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)$.

### 1.6 The (non-reflective) unigonal divisors for $N \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$

Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$. Let $N=8 k+5$, where $k \geqslant 0$; thus, $\Lambda \cong \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{3}$. Let $v \in \Lambda$ be a unigonal vector, i.e. $v^{2}=-12$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=4$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
v^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2} \tag{1.6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Given $g \in \widetilde{O}^{+}\left(v^{\perp}\right)$, let $\widetilde{g} \in O(\Lambda)$ be the isometry such that $\widetilde{g}(v)=v$ and $\left.\widetilde{g}\right|_{v^{\perp}}=g$. Then $\widetilde{g} \in O^{+}(\Lambda)$. Thus, we have an injection of groups

$$
\begin{array}{rll}
O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right) & \hookrightarrow & \widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)  \tag{1.6.2}\\
g & \mapsto & \widetilde{g} .
\end{array}
$$

It follows that the injection $\mathscr{D}_{v^{\perp}}^{+} \hookrightarrow \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$descends to a regular map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}_{\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)\right) \xrightarrow{q} H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi) . \tag{1.6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following proposition follows by similar arguments to those used above; we omit the proof.
Proposition 1.6.1. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$ and let $N=8 k+5$, where $k \geqslant 0$. The map $q$ in (1.6.3) is an isomorphism onto the unigonal Heegner divisor $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$. Moreover, the intersection of $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and the singular locus of $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ has codimension at least 2 in $H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)$.

In order to simplify notation, from now on we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right):=\mathscr{F}_{I I_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)\right) . \tag{1.6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

A vector $v \in \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}$ is nodal if it has square -2 and divisibility 1 ; it is unigonal if it has square -12 and divisibility 3 . Notice that the set of nodal vectors of $\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}$ is a single $\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)$-orbit, and similarly the set of unigonal vectors up to $\pm 1$ is a single

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

$\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)$-orbit. We let $H_{n}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)$ and $H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)$ be the Heegner divisors of $\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)$ corresponding to a nodal or a unigonal $v \in \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}$, respectively (both are irreducible).

Let $v \in\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)$ be a unigonal vector. Then $v^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}$. As in §1.5.2, we get a regular map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right) \xrightarrow{r} H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right) . \tag{1.6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 1.6.2. Let $k \geqslant 0$. The map $r$ of (1.6.5) is an isomorphism onto the unigonal Heegner divisor $H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)$. Moreover, the intersection of $H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)$ and the singular locus of $\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)$ has codimension at least 2 in $H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)$.

### 1.7 Nested locally symmetric varieties

1.7.1 The infinite tower of $D$ locally symmetric varieties. For $3 \leqslant M$, we let $\xi_{M}$ be a decoration of $\Lambda_{M}$. Choose $N \geqslant 3$. By Proposition 1.4.5, we have a sequence of inclusions of $D$ period spaces:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{3}, \xi_{3}\right) \stackrel{f_{4}}{\rightarrow} \mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{4}, \xi_{4}\right) \stackrel{f_{5}}{\hookrightarrow} \cdots \stackrel{f_{N-1}}{\hookrightarrow} \mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right) \stackrel{f_{N}}{\rightarrow} \mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right) . \tag{1.7.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, $\operatorname{Im} f_{M}=H_{h}\left(\Lambda_{M}, \xi_{M}\right)$ for $4 \leqslant M \leqslant N$. There is a unique continuation of the above sequence. In fact, let $w \in \Lambda_{N}$ be a vector of divisibility 2 and such that $[v / 2]=\xi_{N}$ (e.g. a hyperelliptic vector). Let $L \subset\left(\Lambda_{N} \oplus(-4)\right)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ be the sublattice generated by $\left(\Lambda_{N} \oplus(-4)\right)$ and $(w / 2,1 / 2)$. Then $L$ and $\Lambda_{N+1}$ are even lattices of signature $(2, N+1)$ and their discriminant groups (equipped with the discriminant quadratic forms) are isomorphic. By Theorem 1.13.2 of [Nik80], it follows that $L$ is isomorphic to $\Lambda_{N+1}$; we choose an identification of $L$ with $\Lambda_{N+1}$. Let $\xi_{N+1}$ be the decoration of $\Lambda_{N+1}$ (i.e. $L$ ) defined by $(0,1 / 2)$. Then $v:=\left(0_{\Lambda_{N}}, 1\right)$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $\Lambda_{N+1}$, and $v^{\perp}=\Lambda_{N}$. Furthermore, $\xi_{N}$ is the decoration of $v^{\perp}$ associated to $\xi_{N+1}$. In conclusion, there is an infinite prolongation of (1.7.1), unique up to isomorphism:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{3}, \xi_{3}\right) \xrightarrow{f_{4}} \cdots \xrightarrow{f_{N}} \mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right) \xrightarrow{f_{N+1}} \mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{N+1}, \xi_{N+1}\right) \xrightarrow{f_{N+2}} \cdots . \tag{1.7.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $3 \leqslant M<N$, we let $f_{M, N}:=f_{N} \circ f_{N-1} \circ \cdots \circ f_{M+1}$. Thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{M, N}: \mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{M}, \xi_{M}\right) \hookrightarrow \mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right) . \tag{1.7.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

1.7.2 Other building blocks of the $D$ tower. Let

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right) \xrightarrow{l_{8 k+3}} H_{u}\left(\Lambda_{8 k+3}, \xi_{8 k+3}\right), \\
\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right) \xrightarrow{m_{8 k+4}} H_{u}\left(\Lambda_{8 k+4}, \xi_{8 k+4}\right), \\
\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right) \\
\xrightarrow{p_{8 k+3}} H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right), \\
\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right) \xrightarrow{q_{8 k+5}} H_{u}\left(\Lambda_{8 k+5}, \xi_{8 k+5}\right),  \tag{1.7.8}\\
\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right) \xrightarrow{r_{8 k+4}} H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right),
\end{array}
$$

be the isomorphisms in (1.5.4), (1.5.9), (1.5.11), (1.6.3), and (1.6.5), respectively: the convention is that the subscript denotes the dimension of the period space containing the codomain as Heegner divisor (as for the maps $f_{N}$ ).

Claim 1.7.1. Keeping notation as above, $f_{8 k+4} \circ l_{8 k+3}=m_{8 k+4} \circ p_{8 k+3}$ and $f_{8 k+5} \circ m_{8 k+4}=$ $q_{8 k+5} \circ r_{8 k+4}$.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Proof. Choose an isomorphism $\Lambda_{8 k+4} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}^{2}$ and let $e_{1}, e_{2}$ be generators of the addend $A_{1}^{2}$ such that $-2=e_{1}^{2}=e_{2}^{2},\left(e_{1}, e_{2}\right)=0$. Let $\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \delta$ be the obvious inclusions in the diagram


The map $f_{8 k+4} \circ l_{8 k+3}$ is induced by the composition $\beta \circ \alpha$, and the map $m_{8 k+4} \circ p_{8 k+3}$ is induced by the composition $\delta \circ \gamma$. Thus, $f_{8 k+4} \circ l_{8 k+3}=m_{8 k+4} \circ p_{8 k+3}$ because $\beta \circ \alpha=\delta \circ \gamma$. A similar proof shows that $f_{8 k+5} \circ m_{8 k+4}=q_{8 k+5} \circ r_{8 k+4}$.

The picture of the $D$ tower is periodic of period 8:

1.7.3 Stratification of the support of the boundary divisor. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N$. We let $\Delta^{(1)}(\Lambda, \xi) \subset \mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ be the support of the boundary divisor, i.e.

$$
\Delta^{(1)}(\Lambda, \xi):=\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi) & \text { if } N \not \equiv 3,4 & (\bmod 8)  \tag{1.7.11}\\
H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi) \cup H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi) & \text { if } N \equiv 3,4 & (\bmod 8)
\end{array}\right.
$$

We let $\widetilde{\Delta}^{(1)}(\Lambda, \xi) \subset \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$be the inverse image of $\Delta^{(1)}(\Lambda, \xi)$ for the quotient map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\pi: \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi) . \tag{1.7.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, $\widetilde{\Delta}^{(1)}(\Lambda, \xi)$ is a linearized arrangement, in the terminology of Looijenga [Loo03a], and it is naturally stratified. The $k$ th stratum is defined to be

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{\Delta}^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi):=\left\{[\sigma] \in \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \mid \exists \text { lin. ind. non-nodal } \Gamma_{\xi} \text {-reflective } v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k} \in \sigma^{\perp} \cap \Lambda\right\} \tag{1.7.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

i.e. the set of points belonging to $k$ (at least) independent 'hyperplanes'. ${ }^{1}$ Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi):=\pi\left(\widetilde{\Delta}^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi)\right) \tag{1.7.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\pi$ is the quotient map (1.7.12). The strata $\widetilde{\Delta}^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and $\Delta^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi)$ play a key rôle in Looijenga's semitoric compactification of the complement of $\Delta^{(1)}(\Lambda, \xi)$ in $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$. We will show that the subvarieties of $\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ appearing in (1.7.10) are exactly the irreducible components of $\Delta^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi)$. In order to state our results, let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{H}_{h}^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi):=\left\{[\sigma] \in \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \mid \exists \text { lin. ind. hyperelliptic } v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k} \in \sigma^{\perp} \cap \Lambda\right\}, \tag{1.7.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^1]
## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{H}_{u}^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi):=\left\{[\sigma] \in \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \mid \exists \text { lin. ind. reflective unigonal } v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k} \in \sigma^{\perp} \cap \Lambda\right\} . \tag{1.7.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

We let $H_{h}^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi) \subset \mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and $H_{u}^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi) \subset \mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi)$ be the images via $\pi$ of $\mathscr{H}_{h}^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi)$ and $\mathscr{H}_{u}^{(k)}(\Lambda, \xi)$, respectively. In order to simplify notation, we let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta^{(k)}(N)=\Delta^{(k)}\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right), \quad H_{h}^{(k)}(N)=H_{h}^{(k)}\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right), \quad H_{u}^{(k)}(N)=H_{u}^{(k)}\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right) \tag{1.7.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\xi_{N}$ is a decoration of $\Lambda_{N}$. Below is the main result of the present subsubsection.
Proposition 1.7.2. Let $N \geqslant 3$ and keep notation as above. Then

$$
\Delta^{(k)}(N):=\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
H_{h}^{(k)}(N) & \text { if } N \not \equiv 3,4 \quad(\bmod 8) \text { or } k \geqslant 2,  \tag{1.7.18}\\
H_{h}^{(k)}(N) \cup H_{u}^{(k)}(N) & \text { if } N \equiv 3,4 & (\bmod 8) \text { and } k=1 .
\end{array}\right.
$$

If, in addition, $N \geqslant 4$ and $1 \leqslant k \leqslant N-3$, then

$$
H_{h}^{(k)}(N)= \begin{cases}\operatorname{Im} f_{N-k, N} & \text { if } k \not \equiv N-2(\bmod 8),  \tag{1.7.19}\\ \operatorname{Im} f_{N-k, N} \cup \operatorname{Im}\left(f_{N-k+1, N} \circ l_{N-k+1}\right) & \text { if } k \equiv N-2(\bmod 8) .\end{cases}
$$

We will prove Proposition 1.7.2 at the end of the present subsubsection.
Lemma 1.7.3. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a $D$-lattice of dimension $N \equiv 3(\bmod 8)$. Then

$$
\emptyset=H_{h}(\Lambda, \xi) \cap H_{u}(\Lambda, \xi)=H_{u}^{(2)}(\Lambda, \xi)
$$

Proof. Suppose the contrary. Then there exists $[\sigma] \in \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{N}}^{+}$such that $\sigma^{\perp}$ contains a unigonal vector $w \in \Lambda_{N}$ (i.e. $w^{2}=-4$ and $\operatorname{div}(w)=4$ ), and a vector $v$ which is either hyperelliptic or unigonal, and moreover $v \neq \pm w$. It follows that $\langle v, w\rangle$ is a rank- 2 negative-definite lattice ( $\sigma^{\perp} \cap \Lambda_{\mathbb{R}}$ is negative definite) and hence the determinant of $\langle v, w\rangle$ is strictly positive. This in turn implies that $v \perp w$ (recall that $(v, w) \in 4 \mathbb{Z}$ ). On the other hand, $\Lambda=\mathbb{Z} w \oplus w^{\perp}$ because $w^{2}=-4$ and $\operatorname{div}(w)=4$. Since $\Lambda$ has determinant -4 , it follows that the lattice $w^{\perp}$ is unimodular. Now $v$ belongs to the unimodular lattice $w^{\perp}$, and $\operatorname{div}_{\Lambda}(v) \in\{2,4\}$; that is a contradiction.

By similar arguments, we obtain the following lemmas (we omit the proofs).
Lemma 1.7.4. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a $D$-lattice of dimension $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$. If $w_{1}, w_{2}$ are nonproportional unigonal vectors of $(\Lambda, \xi)$, spanning a negative-definite sublattice, then $\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle$ is isomorphic to $D_{2}$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda=\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle \oplus\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle^{\perp}, \quad\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2, N-2} . \tag{1.7.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular $\left\{w_{1}^{*}, w_{2}^{*}\right\}=\left\{\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\}$, where, as usual, $A_{\Lambda}=\left\{0, \xi, \zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\}$.
Lemma 1.7.5. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a $D$-lattice of dimension $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$. Let $v, w$ be a hyperelliptic and a unigonal vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$, respectively, spanning a negative-definite sublattice. Then $\langle v, w\rangle$ is isomorphic to $D_{2}$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda=\langle v, w\rangle \oplus\langle v, w\rangle^{\perp}, \quad\langle v, w\rangle^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2, N-2} . \tag{1.7.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Lemma 1.7.6. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a decorated $D$-lattice of dimension $N \geqslant 4$. Let $v$ be a hyperelliptic vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$ and $\eta$ be the decoration of the $D$-lattice $v^{\perp}$ defined in Remark 1.4.2. Suppose that $w$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $(\Lambda, \xi)$, orthogonal to $v$. Then one of the following holds:
(1) $w$ has divisibility 2 in $v^{\perp}$ and it is a hyperelliptic vector of $\left(v^{\perp}, \eta\right)$;
(2) $w$ has divisibility 4 in $v^{\perp},\{v, w\}^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{I}_{2, N-2}$, and $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$.

Proposition 1.7.7. Let $N \geqslant 4$ and $1 \leqslant k \leqslant N-3$. Let $(\Lambda, \xi)$ be a dimension- $N D$-lattice and $v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k}$ be pairwise-orthogonal hyperelliptic vectors of $(\Lambda, \xi)$. Then, for any $1 \leqslant i \leqslant k-1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{i}\right\}^{\perp} \cong \Lambda_{N-i}, \tag{1.7.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{i}\right\}^{\perp}$ carries a decoration $\xi(i)$ such that $\left(\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{i-1}\right\}^{\perp}, \xi(i-1)\right)$ induces $\left(\left\{v_{1}, \ldots\right.\right.$, $\left.\left.v_{i}\right\}^{\perp}, \xi(i)\right)$ as in Remark 1.4.2 (for $i=1$, this means that $(\Lambda, \xi)$ induces $\left(v_{1}^{\perp}, \xi(1)\right)$ ) and $v_{i}$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $\left(\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{i}\right\}^{\perp}, \xi(i)\right)$. Moreover, one of the following holds:
(1) $v_{k}$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $\left(\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-1}\right\}^{\perp}, \xi(k-1)\right)$;
(2) $k \geqslant 2, N \equiv k+2(\bmod 8), v_{k}$ has divisibility 4 in $\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-1}\right\}^{\perp}$, and $\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k}\right\}^{\perp} \cong$ $\mathrm{II}_{2, N-k}$.

Proof. By induction on $k$. If $k=1$, the proposition holds by Lemma 1.4.1; if $k=2$, it holds by Lemma 1.7.6. Now let $k \geqslant 3$. By the inductive hypothesis, $\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-2}\right\}^{\perp},\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-1}\right\}^{\perp}$, and $\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-2}, v_{k}\right\}^{\perp}$ are either $D$-lattices or unimodular. Since $v_{k-1}$ and $v_{k}$ have divisibility 2 in $\Lambda$, it follows that $\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-2}\right\}^{\perp},\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-1}\right\}^{\perp}$, and $\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-2}, v_{k}\right\}^{\perp}$ are not unimodular and hence they are $D$-lattices. In particular, by Lemma 1.7.6, $v_{k-1}$ and $v_{k}$ are hyperelliptic vectors of $\left(\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-2}\right\}^{\perp}, \xi(k-2)\right)$. The proposition follows by applying Lemma 1.7.6 to the decorated $D$-lattice $\left(\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-2}\right\}^{\perp}, \xi(k-2)\right)$ and the vectors $v=v_{k-1}, w=v_{k}$.

Proof of Proposition 1.7.2. Let us prove (1.7.18). It is obvious that $\Delta^{(k)}(N)$ contains the set on the right-hand side. Next, we check that the left-hand side of (1.7.18) is contained in the right-hand side. If $N \not \equiv 3,4(\bmod 8)$, the containment is obvious because there are no reflective unigonal vectors. If $N \equiv 3(\bmod 8)(\operatorname{and} k \geqslant 2)$, the containment follows from Lemma 1.7.3. It remains to prove that if $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$, then $\Delta^{(2)}(N) \subset H_{h}^{(2)}(N)$; this follows from Lemma 1.7.4.

Lastly, we prove (1.7.19). Suppose that $\pi([\sigma]) \in H_{h}^{(k)}(N)$, i.e. there exist linearly independent hyperelliptic vectors $v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k}$ of $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ such that $\sigma \in\left\{v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k}\right\}^{\perp}$. The latter condition implies that the restriction of $(,)_{\Lambda}$ to the span of $v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k}$ is negative definite and hence the vectors $v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k}$ are pairwise orthogonal by Lemma 1.4.7. Thus, we may apply Proposition 1.7.7; if Item (1) holds, then $\pi([\sigma]) \in \operatorname{Im} f_{N-k, N}$; if Item (2) holds, then $N \equiv k+2(\bmod 8)$ and $\pi([\sigma]) \in \operatorname{Im}\left(f_{N-k+1, N} \circ l_{N-k+1}\right)$. This proves that the left-hand side of (1.7.19) is contained in the right-hand side. The converse is obvious.

Remark 1.7.8. Let $N=8 s+4$, where $s \geqslant 0$. We have proved that

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{u}^{(2)}(N)=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{8 s+4} \circ l_{8 s+3}\right)=\operatorname{Im}\left(m_{8 s+4} \circ p_{8 s+3}\right) . \tag{1.7.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular, it follows from Lemma 1.7.3 that $\operatorname{Im} f_{N-2, N} \cap H_{u}^{(2)}(N)=\emptyset$.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

## 2. Locally symmetric spaces $\mathscr{F}(N)$ as period spaces for $N \in\{18,19,20,21\}$

We will denote by $\mathscr{F}(N)$ the locally symmetric variety $\mathscr{F}\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$, where $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ is a decorated dimension- $N D$-lattice. As is well known, the period space for quartic $K 3$ surfaces is $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{19}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{19}\right)\right)$, and the latter is equal to $\mathscr{F}(19)$ by Proposition 1.2.3. We will prove that $\mathscr{F}(18)$ is the period space of hyperelliptic quartic $K 3$ surfaces, see $\S 2.2$, and that $\mathscr{F}(20)$ is the period space of desingularized EPW sextics (a quotient of the period space of double EPW sextics by the natural duality involution; see [O'Gr15]). Lastly, in § 2.3, we will establish a relation between $\mathscr{F}(21)$ and the period space of hyperkähler 10 -folds of Type OG10.

Notation 2.0.1. We will denote by $H_{h}(N), H_{u}(N)$ the hyperelliptic and unigonal divisors in $\mathscr{F}(N)$.

### 2.1 Quartic $K 3$ surfaces and their periods

For us a $K 3$ surface is a complex projective surface $X$ with DuVal singularities, trivial dualizing sheaf $\omega_{X}$, and $H^{1}\left(\mathscr{O}_{X}\right)=0$. A polarization of degree $d$ on a $K 3$ surface $X$ is an ample line bundle $L$ on $X$ such that $c_{1}(L)$ is primitive and $c_{1}(L) \cdot c_{1}(L)=d$. The degree $d$ of a polarization is strictly positive and even and hence we may write $d=2 g-2$, with $g \geqslant 2$; then $g$ is the arithmetic genus of curves in $|L|$. A polarized $K 3$ surface is a couple $(X, L)$, where $X$ is a $K 3$ surface and $L$ is a polarization of $X$; the degree and genus of $(X, L)$ are defined to be the degree and genus of $L$. We recall the following fundamental result.

Theorem 2.1.1 (Mayer [May72]). Let $(X, L)$ be a polarized $K 3$ of genus $g$. Then one of the following holds.
(1) The map $\varphi_{L}: S \rightarrow|L|^{\vee} \cong \mathbb{P}^{g}$ defined by $L$ is regular and is an isomorphism onto its image (a surface whose generic hyperplane section is a canonical curve of genus $g$ ).
(2) The map $\varphi_{L}: S \rightarrow|L|^{\vee} \cong \mathbb{P}^{g}$ is regular and is a double cover of its image (a rational surface of degree $g-1$ ).
(3) The linear system $|L|$ has a fixed component, a smooth rational curve $R$, and $L(-R) \cong$ $\mathscr{O}_{X}(g E)$, where $E$ is an elliptic curve.

Actually Mayer considered big and nef divisors on a smooth $K 3$ surface; one gets the result for a singular $K 3$ surface $X$ upon replacing $X$ by its minimal desingularization $\widetilde{X}$, and $L$ by the pull-back $\widetilde{L}$ of $L$ to $\widetilde{X}$.

Definition 2.1.2. A polarized K3 surface $(X, L)$ of degree 4 is hyperelliptic if Item (2) of Theorem 2.1.1 holds, and it is unigonal if Item (3) of Theorem 2.1.1 holds.

Remark 2.1.3. Let $Q \subset \mathbb{P}^{3}$ be an irreducible quadric, i.e. either a smooth quadric or a quadric cone over a smooth conic. Let $B \in\left|\omega_{Q}^{-2}\right|$ and suppose that $B$ has simple singularities. Let $\varphi: X \rightarrow$ $Q$ be the double cover ramified over $B$ and let $L:=\varphi^{*} \mathscr{O}_{Q}(1)$. Then $(X, L)$ is a hyperelliptic quartic $K 3$ surface and the image of $\varphi_{L}: X \rightarrow|L|^{\vee}$ is identified with $Q$. Conversely, every hyperelliptic quartic $K 3$ surface is obtained by this procedure.

Remark 2.1.4. Let $\mathbb{F}_{4}:=\mathbb{P}\left(\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(4) \oplus \mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}\right)$. Let $\rho: \mathbb{F}_{4} \rightarrow \mathbb{P}^{1}$ be the structure map, let $F$ be a fiber of $\rho$, and let $A:=\mathbb{P}\left(\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(4)\right) \subset \mathbb{F}_{4}$ be the negative section of $\rho$. Let $B \in|3 A+12 F|$ be reduced with simple singularities, and disjoint from $A$ (the generic divisor in $|3 A+12 F|$ has these properties because $B \cdot A=0)$. Let $\pi: X \rightarrow \mathbb{F}_{4}$ be the double cover branched over $A+B$.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Then $X$ is a $K 3$ surface because $(A+B) \in\left|-2 K_{\mathbb{F}_{4}}\right|$. Since $\pi$ is simply ramified over $A$, we have $\pi^{*} A=2 R$, where $R$ is a smooth rational curve. Let $E:=\pi^{*} F$; thus, $E$ is an elliptic curve, moving in the elliptic fibration $\rho \circ \pi: X \rightarrow \mathbb{P}^{1}$. Then $\left(X, \mathscr{O}_{X}(R+3 E)\right)$ is a unigonal quartic $K 3$ surface and conversely every unigonal quartic is obtained by this procedure.

If $(X, L)$ is a quartic $K 3$ surface, the period point $\Pi(X, L) \in \mathscr{F}(19)$ is defined as follows. Let $\widetilde{X}$ be the minimal desingularization of $X$ and $\widetilde{L}$ be the pull-back of $L$ to $\widetilde{X}$. The lattices $c_{1}(\widetilde{L})_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\perp}:=c_{1}(\widetilde{L})^{\perp} \cap H^{2}(\widetilde{X} ; \mathbb{Z})$ and $\Lambda_{19}$ are isomorphic; let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi: c_{1}(\widetilde{L})_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\perp} \xrightarrow{\sim} \Lambda_{19} \tag{2.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

be an isomorphism, and $\psi_{\mathbb{C}}: c_{1}(\widetilde{L})^{\perp} \xrightarrow{\sim} \Lambda_{19, \mathbb{C}}$ be the $\mathbb{C}$-linear extension of $\psi$. The line $\psi_{\mathbb{C}}\left(H^{2,0}(\widetilde{X})\right)$ belongs to $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{19}}$ and, if necessary, we may precompose $\psi$ with an element of $\widetilde{O}\left(c_{1}(\widetilde{L})^{\perp}\right)$ so that $\psi_{\mathbb{C}}\left(H^{2,0}(\widetilde{X})\right)$ belongs to $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{19}}^{+}$. Such a point is well determined up to $\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{19}\right)$ and hence it determines

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Pi(X, L) \in \widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{19}\right) \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{19}}^{+}=\mathscr{F}(19) . \tag{2.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is the period point of $(X, L)$.
Now let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}(19):=\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right| / / \mathrm{PGL}(4) \tag{2.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

be the GIT moduli space of quartic surfaces in $\mathbb{P}^{3}$ (see [Sha81] for many results about $\mathfrak{M}(19)$ ).
Definition 2.1.5. Let $\mathscr{U}(19) \subset\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right|$ be the open subset parametrizing quartics with ADE singularities.

Then $\mathscr{U}(19)$ is contained in the stable locus of $\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right|$ for the natural action of $\operatorname{PGL}(4)$ by [Sha81]. By global Torelli for $K 3$ surfaces, and Mayer's theorem 2.1.1, the period map restricted to $\mathscr{U}(19) / / \mathrm{PGL}(4)$ defines an isomorphism

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{U}(19) / / \mathrm{PGL}(4) \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathscr{F}(19) \backslash\left(H_{h}(19) \cup H_{u}(19)\right) . \tag{2.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, we have a birational map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{p}_{19}: \mathfrak{M}(19) \longrightarrow \mathscr{F}(19)^{*} \tag{2.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

and one of the main goals of the present paper is to propose a conjectural decomposition of $\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}$ as a composition of the $\mathbb{Q}$-factorialization of $\mathscr{F}(19)^{*}$ and a series of flips of subloci described by the $D$ tower of $\S 1.7$. The geometric behavior of this decomposition is discussed in [LO18b].

### 2.2 Periods of hyperelliptic and unigonal quartics

The following is standard.
Proposition 2.2.1. Let $(X, L)$ be a quartic $K 3$ surface. Then:
(1) $(X, L)$ is hyperelliptic if and only if $\Pi(X, L) \in H_{h}(19)$; and
(2) $(X, L)$ is unigonal if and only if $\Pi(X, L) \in H_{u}(19)$.

Remark 2.2.2. By Proposition 1.4.5, there is a natural isomorphism between $\mathscr{F}$ (18) and the hyperelliptic divisor $H_{h}(19)$. By Proposition 2.2.1, it follows that we may identify $\mathscr{F}$ (18) with the period space for hyperelliptic quartic $K 3$ surfaces.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

There is a GIT moduli space which is in a relation to $\mathscr{F}(18)$ that is similar to the relation between $\mathfrak{M}(19)$ and $\mathscr{F}(19)$. In fact, let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}(18):=\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(4) \boxtimes \mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(4)\right| / / \operatorname{Aut}\left(\mathbb{P}^{1} \times \mathbb{P}^{1}\right) \tag{2.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Definition 2.2.3. Let $\mathscr{U}(18) \subset\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1} \times \mathbb{P}^{1}}(4,4)\right|$ be the open subset parametrizing curves with ADE singularities.

If $D \in \mathscr{U}(18)$, the double cover $\pi: X \rightarrow \mathbb{P}^{1} \times \mathbb{P}^{1}$ branched over $D$ is a $K 3$ surface, and $\left(X, \pi^{*}\left(\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(1) \boxtimes \mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(1)\right)\right)$ is a hyperelliptic quartic $K 3$ surface. Now $\mathscr{U}(18)$ is contained in the stable locus of $\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{\times}} \mathbb{P}^{1}(4,4)\right|$ by [Sha81, Theorem 4.8] and, by associating to the orbit of $D \in \mathscr{U}(18)$ the period of $\left(X, \pi^{*}\left(\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(1) \boxtimes \mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(1)\right)\right)$ (notation as above), one gets an isomorphism

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{U}(18) / / \operatorname{Aut}\left(\mathbb{P}^{1} \times \mathbb{P}^{1}\right) \xrightarrow{\sim}\left(\mathscr{F}(18) \backslash H_{h}(18)\right) . \tag{2.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, we have a birational period map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{p}_{18}: \mathfrak{M}(18) \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(18)^{*}, \tag{2.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

whose behavior is very similar to that of $\mathfrak{p}_{19}$ (see [LO18a] for a full discussion).

### 2.3 Periods of certain higher-dimensional hyperkähler varieties

2.3.1 Double $E P W$ sextics. Let $(X, L)$ be a polarized hyperkähler (HK) variety of Type $K 3{ }^{[2]}$, where $q\left(c_{1}(L)\right)=2\left(q\right.$ is the Beauville-Bogomolov quadratic form on $\left.H^{2}(X)\right)$. Then

$$
c_{1}(L)^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,18} \oplus A_{1} \oplus A_{1} \cong \Lambda_{20}
$$

In the above equation, perpendicularity is with respect to the Beauville-Bogomolov quadratic form, and the first isomorphism is found in [O'Gr15]. The period space for degree-2 polarized HK varieties of Type $K 3{ }^{[2]}$ is $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{20}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{20}\right)\right)$; in fact, the moduli space of such (polarized) varieties is identified with an open dense subset of $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{20}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{20}\right)\right)$ by Verbitsky's global Torelli theorem. (One should introduce an analogue of DuVal singularities, in order to identify $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{20}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{20}\right)\right)$ with the moduli space of polarized varieties with mild singularities.) On the other hand, we have a natural degree-2 covering map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{20}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{20}\right)\right) \xrightarrow{\rho} \mathscr{F}(20) \tag{2.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

because $\Gamma_{\xi_{20}}$ is an index-2 subgroup of $\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{20}\right)$. (See Item (4) of Proposition 1.2.3.)
There is an analogue of the GIT moduli spaces $\mathfrak{M}(19)$ and $\mathfrak{M}(18)$ in this case as well. In fact, let $(X, L)$ be a generic degree- 2 polarized HK variety of Type $K 3{ }^{[2]}$. Then the map $\varphi_{L}: X \rightarrow|L|^{\vee} \cong \mathbb{P}^{5}$ is regular, finite, of degree 2 onto a special sextic hypersurface: an $E P W$ sextic. Conversely, given an EPW sextic $Y \subset \mathbb{P}^{5}$, there is a canonical double cover $f: X \rightarrow Y$ and, if $Y$ is generic, then $\left(X, f^{*} \mathscr{O}_{Y}(1)\right)$ is a degree-2 polarized HK variety of Type $K 3{ }^{[2]}$. (For the definition and properties of double EPW sextics, we refer to [O'Gr06] and [O'Gr16].) The parameter space for EPW sextics is (an open dense subset of) $\mathbb{L} \mathbb{G}\left(\bigwedge^{3} \mathbb{C}^{6}\right)$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{M}(20)=\mathbb{L} \mathbb{G}\left(\bigwedge^{3} \mathbb{C}^{6}\right) / / \mathrm{PGL}_{6}(\mathbb{C}) \tag{2.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have a birational period map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{\mathfrak{p}}_{20}: \mathfrak{M}(20) \longrightarrow \mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{20}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{20}\right)\right)^{*} \tag{2.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

The dual of an EPW sextic is another EPW sextic, see [O'Gr08], and hence we have a (regular) duality involution $\delta: \mathfrak{M}(20) \rightarrow \mathfrak{M}(20)$. This is the geometric version of the covering involution of the double cover $\rho$ in (2.3.1). The upshot is that we have a birational period map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{p}_{20}: \mathfrak{M}(20) /\langle\delta\rangle \longrightarrow \mathscr{F}(20)^{*} . \tag{2.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, we may view $\mathscr{F}(20)$ as the period space for double EPW sextics up to duality. Alternatively, $\mathscr{F}(20)$ is the period space for the Calabi-Yau fourfolds obtained by blowing up a (generic) EPW sextic $Y$ along its singular locus (a smooth surface).

The inverse images by $\rho$ of the reflective Heegner divisors of $\mathscr{F}(20)$ have appeared in [O'Gr15]. In fact,

$$
\rho^{-1} H_{n}(20)=\mathbb{S}_{2}^{\star}, \quad \rho^{-1} H_{h}(20)=\mathbb{S}_{4}, \quad \rho^{-1} H_{u}(20)=\mathbb{S}_{2}^{\prime} \cup \mathbb{S}_{2}^{\prime \prime}
$$

For a geometric interpretation of periods in $\mathbb{S}_{2}^{\star}, \mathbb{S}_{4}, \mathbb{S}_{2}^{\prime}$, and $\mathbb{S}_{2}^{\prime \prime}$, see [O'Gr15, §5].
2.3.2 EPW cubes. Let $(X, L)$ be a polarized HK variety of Type $K 3^{[3]}$, where $q\left(c_{1}(L)\right)=4$ and $\operatorname{div}\left(c_{1}(L)\right)=2$. Then

$$
c_{1}(L)^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,18} \oplus A_{1} \oplus A_{1} \cong \Lambda_{20} .
$$

Moreover, one shows that the period space for polarized HK varieties of Type $K 3{ }^{[3]}$ of this kind is $\mathscr{F}(20)$. (We thank M. Kapustka and G. Mongardi for bringing this to our attention.) Iliev et al. [IKKR19] have proved that the generic such polarized HK variety is isomorphic to an EPW cube, a double cover of a codimension- 3 degeneracy locus in $\operatorname{Gr}\left(3, \mathbb{C}^{6}\right)$. The parameter space of EPW cubes is the same as that for double EPW sextics (but the EPW cubes parametrized by $A \in \mathbb{L} \mathbb{G}\left(\bigwedge^{3} \mathbb{C}^{6}\right)$ and the dual Lagrangian $A^{\perp} \in \mathbb{L} \mathbb{G}\left(\bigwedge^{3}\left(\mathbb{C}^{6}\right)^{\vee}\right)$ are isomorphic $)$.
2.3.3 Hyperkähler varieties of Type OG10. Let $X$ be a HK manifold of Type OG10. Then $H^{2}(X ; \mathbb{Z})$ equipped with the Beauville-Bogomolov quadratic form is isomorphic to $\mathrm{II}_{3,19} \oplus A_{2}$; see [Rap08]. Let $a, b \in A_{2}$ be standard generators $\left(a^{2}=b^{2}=(a+b)^{2}=-2\right)$ and $v \in \mathrm{II}_{3,19}$ of square 2. Let $h:=(3 v+a-b)$; notice that $h^{2}=12$ and $\left(h, H^{2}(X ; \mathbb{Z})\right)=3 \mathbb{Z}$. The discriminant group and quadratic form of $h^{\perp}$ are isomorphic to the discriminant group and quadratic form of $\Lambda_{21}$, respectively, and hence $h^{\perp} \cong \Lambda_{21}$ by Theorem 1.13.2 of [Nik80]. Thus, $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{21}}$ is the classifying space for the corresponding 10-dimensional polarized O'Grady HK manifolds. By Verbitsky's global Torelli theorem [Ver13], the moduli space for such varieties is isomorphic to $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{21}}(\Gamma)$, where $\Gamma<O^{+}\left(\Lambda_{21}\right)$ is the relevant monodromy group (a subgroup of finite index; see [Ver13]). See [Mon16] for a result regarding the monodromy group of O'Grady's 10-dimensional HK manifolds.

## 3. Borcherds' relations for $D$ locally symmetric varieties

### 3.1 Set-up and statement of the main results

Let $N \geqslant 3$. We will derive relations among divisor classes on $\mathscr{F}(N)$ in the range $N \leqslant 25$ by considering suitable quasi-pull-backs of Borcherds' celebrated reflective modular form for the orthogonal group $O\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,26}\right)$.

In order to state our results, we let $\mu(N)$, for $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$, be defined by Table 1 .
Theorem 3.1.1 (First Borcherds' relation). Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
2(12+(26-N)(25-N)) \lambda(N)=H_{n}(N)+2(26-N) H_{h}(N)+\tau(N) \mu(N) H_{u}(N) \tag{3.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tau(N)$ is equal to 1 if $N \equiv 3,4(\bmod 8)$ and is equal to 2 otherwise.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Table 1. Definition of $\mu(N)$.

| $N$ | 3 | 4 | $5-10$ | 11 | 12 | $13-18$ | 19 | 20 | 21 | 22 | 23 | 24 | 25 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\mu(N)$ | 46 | 1 | 0 | 30 | 1 | 0 | 78 | 33 | 16 | 8 | 4 | 2 | 1 |

Theorem 3.1.2 (Second Borcherds' relation). Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 17$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
2(132+(18-N)(17-N)) \lambda(N)=H_{n}(N)+2(18-N) H_{h}(N)+\tau(N) \mu(N+8) H_{u}(N), \tag{3.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tau(N)$ is as in Theorem 3.1.1.
Theorems 3.1.1 and 3.1.2 will be proved in § 3.2. Below we prove a corollary which is extremely important for our work.

Corollary 3.1.3 (Gritsenko's relation, [Gri18, Theorem 3.2]). Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 17$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
32(14-N) \lambda(N)=16 H_{h}(N)+\tau(N)(\mu(N)-\mu(N+8)) H_{u}(N) \tag{3.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Taking the difference between the identities (3.1.1) and (3.1.2), we see that the terms $H_{n}(N)$ cancel, giving the relationship above between $\lambda(N), H_{h}(N)$, and $H_{u}(N)$.

Corollary 3.1.4. The following hold:
(1) $H_{h}(14)$ is linearly equivalent to $H_{u}(14)$;
(2) if $4 \leqslant N<14$, then $H_{h}(N)$ is a big divisor;
(3) if $4 \leqslant N \leqslant 10$, then $H_{h}(N)$ is an ample divisor.

Proof. This is a direct consequence of (3.1.3). Insert $N=14$ into (3.1.3) to get Item (1). Next, for $N<14$, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{h}(N)=2(14-N) \lambda(N)+\frac{\tau(N)}{16}(\mu(N+8)-\mu(N)) H_{u}(N) \tag{3.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $(14-N)>0, \lambda(N)$ is ample, and $\mu(N) \leqslant \mu(N+8)$ (for $4 \leqslant N<14$ ), we get that $H_{h}(N)$ is big. For $4 \leqslant N \leqslant 10$, the coefficient of $H_{u}(N)$ is zero and hence $H_{h}(N)$ is ample.

### 3.2 Proof of Borcherds' relations

3.2.1 Borcherds' automorphic form. We recall that Borcherds [Bor95] constructed an automorphic form $\Phi_{12}$ on $\mathscr{D}_{\mathrm{I}_{2,26}}^{+}$for the orthogonal group $O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right)$, of weight 12 , whose zero-locus is the union of the nodal hyperplanes (the intersections $\delta^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\mathrm{I}_{2,26}}^{+}$, for $\delta$ a root of $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ ). Actually $\Phi_{12}$ vanishes with order one on each nodal hyperplane, i.e.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{div}\left(\Phi_{12}\right)=\sum_{ \pm \delta \in R\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right)} \delta^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\mathrm{II}_{2,26}}^{+}=\mathscr{H}_{\delta_{0}, \mathrm{II}, 26}\left(O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right)\right), \tag{3.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where (as usual) $R\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right)$ is the set of roots of $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ and $\delta_{0}$ is a chosen root of $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$. In other words, the divisor of $\Phi_{12}$ is the pre-Heegner divisor associated to a root of $\mathrm{I}_{2,26}$.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Remark 3.2.1. Let $\Lambda$ be a lattice of signature $(2, m)$, let $\Gamma<O^{+}(\Lambda)$ be a subgroup of finite index, and let $\Phi$ be a $\Gamma$-automorphic form on $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$of weight $w$. Then $\Phi$ descends to a regular section of $\mathscr{L}(\Lambda, \Gamma)^{\otimes w}$; see $\S 1.3 .1$. Thus, (3.2.1) gives that, on the locally symmetric variety $O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right) \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\mathrm{II}_{2,26}}^{+}$, one has the relation $12 \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right)=H_{n}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right)$, where $\lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right)$ is the first Chern class of the automorphic (or Hodge) line bundle and $H_{n}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right)$ is the nodal Heegner divisor.

Now suppose that $\Lambda$ is a lattice of signature $(2, n)$ and we are given a saturated embedding $\Lambda \subset \mathrm{II}_{2,26}$. The quasi-pull-back of $\Phi_{12}$ is defined as

$$
\Phi_{\Lambda}:=\left.\frac{\Phi_{12}}{\prod_{ \pm \delta \in R\left(\Lambda^{\perp}\right)} \ell_{\delta}}\right|_{\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}},
$$

where $\ell_{\delta}$ is the restriction to $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$of the linear form $\sigma \mapsto(\delta, \sigma)$. Then $\Phi_{\Lambda}$ is an automorphic form on $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$for the stable orthogonal group $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)$; see [BKPSB98] and [GHS07, § 8]. Notice that our notation is somewhat imprecise: the automorphic form $\Phi_{\Lambda}$ depends on the embedding of $\Lambda$ into $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ and we will see instances of this later on. The weight and divisor of $\Phi_{\Lambda}$ are computed as follows.

Recipe 3.2.2. The weight of $\Phi_{\Lambda}$ is equal to $12+w$, where $w=\left|R\left(\Lambda^{\perp}\right)\right| / 2$ is half the number of roots of $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ perpendicular to $\Lambda$. The divisor of $\Phi_{\Lambda}$ is supported on the union of the intersections $\delta^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$for $\delta \in R\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,26}\right) \backslash R\left(\Lambda^{\perp}\right)$. More precisely,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{div}\left(\Phi_{\Lambda}\right)=\sum_{ \pm \delta \in R\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right) \backslash R\left(\Lambda^{\perp}\right)}\left(\delta^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}\right) \tag{3.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 3.2.3. Let $\delta \in R\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,26}\right) \backslash R\left(\Lambda^{\perp}\right)$; then $\delta^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$is non-empty if and only if $\left\langle\delta, \Lambda^{\perp}\right\rangle$ is negative definite. Given such a $\delta$, let $\nu(\delta)$ be a generator of $\left(\mathbb{Q} \delta \oplus \mathbb{Q} \Lambda^{\perp}\right) \cap \Lambda$ (thus $\nu(\delta)$ is determined up to multiplication by $\pm 1$ ). Then

$$
\delta^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}=\nu(\delta)^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} .
$$

Let $\operatorname{Sat}\left\langle\delta, \Lambda^{\perp}\right\rangle$ be the saturation of $\left\langle\delta, \Lambda^{\perp}\right\rangle$ in $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$. If $\delta^{\prime} \in \operatorname{Sat}\left\langle\delta, \Lambda^{\perp}\right\rangle$ is another root which does not belong to $\Lambda^{\perp}$, then $\nu\left(\delta^{\prime}\right)= \pm \nu(\delta)$. The upshot is that we may rewrite the right-hand side of (3.2.2) as a finite sum of pre-Heegner divisors $\mathscr{H}_{\nu\left(\delta_{i}\right)}$, where the coefficient of $\mathscr{H}_{\nu\left(\delta_{i}\right)}$ is equal to half the number of the roots of $\operatorname{Sat}\left\langle\delta_{i}, \Lambda^{\perp}\right\rangle$ which do not belong to $\Lambda^{\perp}$ (call this number $m\left(\delta_{i}\right)$ ):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{div}\left(\Phi_{\Lambda}\right)=m\left(\delta_{1}\right) \mathscr{H}_{\nu\left(\delta_{i}\right), \Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right)+\cdots+m\left(\delta_{s}\right) \mathscr{H}_{\nu\left(\delta_{s}\right), \Lambda}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda)\right) \tag{3.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lastly, (3.2.3) descends to a relation between the Hodge bundle on $\widetilde{O}^{+}(\Lambda) \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$and the Heegner divisors corresponding to the vectors $\nu\left(\delta_{s}\right)$; see Remark 3.2.1.

The plan is the following. We will choose embeddings of $\Lambda_{N}$ (for $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$ ) into $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ such that the pre-Heegner divisors appearing on the right-hand side of (3.2.3) are associated to minimal norm vectors (see Definition 1.3.7). For a given embedding, (3.2.3) descends to a relation between the Hodge bundle and the Heegner divisors of $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{N}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)$ associated to minimal norm vectors. For $N$ odd, $\mathscr{F}(N)=\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{N}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)$ and the relations that we will get are those of Theorems 3.1.1 and 3.1.2. If $N$ is even, we will get the relations in Theorems 3.1.1 and 3.1 .2 by pushing forward via the double covering $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{N}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right) \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(N)$.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

### 3.2.2 Embeddings of $\Lambda_{N}$ into $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$.

Lemma 3.2.4. If $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$, the lattice $\Lambda_{N}$ has a saturated embedding into the unimodular lattice $\mathrm{I}_{2,26}$ with orthogonal complement isomorphic to $D_{26-N}$ and, if $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 17$, it also has a saturated embedding with orthogonal complement isomorphic to $E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}$. Conversely, any saturated embedding of $D_{26-N}$, or of $E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}$, into $\mathrm{I}_{2,26}$ has orthogonal complement isomorphic to $\Lambda_{N}$.

Proof. If $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$, then by (1.1.2) and Claim 1.1.1 there exists an isomorphism of groups $\varphi: A_{\Lambda_{N}} \xrightarrow{\sim} D_{26-N}$ which multiplies the discriminant quadratic form by -1 , i.e.

$$
\begin{equation*}
q_{D_{26-N}}(\varphi(\eta))=-q_{\Lambda_{N}}(\eta) \tag{3.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $L \subset\left(\Lambda_{N} \oplus D_{26-N}\right) \mathbb{Q}_{\mathbb{Q}}$ be the overlattice of $\Lambda_{N} \oplus D_{26-N}$ generated by vectors $(v, w)$ such that $[v] \in A_{\Lambda_{N}},[w] \in A_{D_{26-N}}$, and $[w]=\varphi([v])$. Then, because of (3.2.4), $L$ is even, unimodular, of signature ( 2,26 ), and hence is isomorphic to $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$. By construction, $\Lambda_{N}$ is a saturated sublattice of $L$ and its orthogonal complement is isomorphic to $D_{26-N}$. If $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 17$, there exists an isomorphism of groups $\psi: A_{\Lambda_{N}} \xrightarrow{\sim}\left(E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}\right)$ which multiplies the discriminant quadratic forms by -1 , i.e.

$$
q_{E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}}(\psi(\eta))=-q_{\Lambda_{N}}(\eta) .
$$

Proceeding as in the previous case, one constructs an overlattice of $\Lambda_{N} \oplus\left(E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}\right)$ which is isomorphic to $\mathrm{I}_{2,26}$, in which $\Lambda_{N}$ is saturated, with orthogonal complement isomorphic to $E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}$.

Let us prove the last statement of the lemma. Suppose that $D_{26-N} \subset \mathrm{I}_{2,26}$, or $\left(E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}\right) \subset \mathrm{I}_{2,26}$, is saturated. Let $M:=D_{26-N}^{\perp}\left(\right.$ respectively $\left.M=\left(E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}\right)^{\perp}\right)$. The overlattice $\mathrm{II}_{2,26} \supset\left(D_{26-N} \oplus M\right)$ (respectively $\left.\mathrm{I}_{2,26} \supset\left(E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}\right) \oplus M\right)$ induces an isomorphism of groups

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.g: A_{D_{26-N}} \xrightarrow{\sim} A_{M} \quad \text { (respectively } g: A_{E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}} \xrightarrow{\sim} A_{M}\right) \tag{3.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

such that $q_{M}(g(\eta))=-q_{D_{26-N}}(\eta)$ for all $\eta \in A_{D_{26-N}}\left(\right.$ respectively, $q_{M}(g(\eta))=-q_{E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}}(\eta)$ for all $\eta \in A_{E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}}$ ). Thus, $M$ has the same signature, parity, and discriminant quadratic form as $\Lambda_{N}$ and hence is isomorphic to $\Lambda_{N}$ by Theorem 1.13.2 of [Nik80].

Remark 3.2.5. Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$. Suppose that $\Lambda_{N} \subset \mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ is a saturated embedding and that $\Lambda_{N}^{\perp}$ is isomorphic either to $D_{26-N}$ or to $E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}$ (in this case $N \leqslant 17$ ). Let ( $N-2$ ) $=8 k+a$, where $k \geqslant 0$ and $a \in\{1, \ldots, 8\}$. Then $\Lambda_{N} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{a}$ and we identify the two lattices throughout.
(1) If $N \leqslant 25$ and $\Lambda_{N}^{\perp} \cong D_{26-N}$, then $\mathrm{I}_{2,26}$ is identified with the sublattice of

$$
\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{a} \oplus D_{26-N}\right)_{\mathbb{Q}}
$$

generated by $\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{a} \oplus D_{26-N}$ together with the following three vectors:

$$
\begin{gathered}
u_{1}:=(0_{4+8 k},(\underbrace{\frac{1}{2}, \ldots, \frac{1}{2}}_{a}),(\underbrace{\frac{1}{2}, \ldots, \frac{1}{2}}_{26-N})), \quad u_{2}:=(0_{4+8 k},(\underbrace{-\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}, \ldots, \frac{1}{2}}_{a}),(\underbrace{-\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}, \ldots, \frac{1}{2}}_{26-N}) \\
u_{3}:=(0_{4+8 k},(\underbrace{1,0, \ldots, 0}_{a}),(\underbrace{1,0, \ldots, 0}_{26-N}) .
\end{gathered}
$$

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

(2) If $N \leqslant 17$ and $\Lambda_{N}^{\perp} \cong E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}$, then $\mathrm{I}_{2,26}$ is identified with the sublattice of

$$
\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{a} \oplus D_{18-N} \oplus E_{8}\right)_{\mathbb{Q}}
$$

generated by $\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{a} \oplus D_{18-N} \oplus E_{8}$ together with the following three vectors:

$$
\begin{gathered}
u_{1}^{\prime}:=(0_{4+8 k},(\underbrace{\left(\frac{1}{2}, \ldots, \frac{1}{2}\right.}_{a}),(\underbrace{\left(\frac{1}{2}, \ldots, \frac{1}{2}\right.}_{18-N}), 0_{8}), \quad u_{2}^{\prime}:=(0_{4+8 k},(\underbrace{-\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}, \ldots, \frac{1}{2}}_{a}),(\underbrace{-\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}, \ldots, \frac{1}{2}}_{18-N}), 0_{8}), \\
u_{3}^{\prime}:=(0_{4+8 k},(\underbrace{1,0, \ldots, 0}_{a}),(\underbrace{1,0, \ldots, 0}_{18-N}), 0_{8}) .
\end{gathered}
$$

Remark 3.2.6. Suppose that $\Lambda_{N} \subset \mathrm{I}_{2,26}$ is a saturated embedding. Then the orthogonal complement of $\Lambda_{N}$ in $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ is a lattice in the genus of $D_{26-N}$. We note the following:

- if $1 \leqslant k \leqslant 8$, there is only one isometry class of lattices in the genus of $D_{k}$, namely $D_{k}$;
- if $9 \leqslant k \leqslant 16$, there are at least two distinct classes, namely $D_{k}$ and $D_{k-8} \oplus E_{8}$.

In other words, there is one Borcherds relation for $N \geqslant 18$ and at least two such relations for $10 \leqslant N \leqslant 17$. For $N \leqslant 17$, the relations relevant for us are those associated to $D_{k}$ and $D_{k-8} \oplus E_{8}$ as those involve only Heegner divisors associated to minimal norm vectors.

Remark 3.2.7. Let $m \geqslant 1$. The non-zero elements of $A_{D_{m}}$ are $\xi, \zeta, \zeta^{\prime}$, where

$$
\xi:=[\underbrace{(1,0, \ldots, 0)}_{m}], \quad \zeta:=[\underbrace{(1 / 2, \ldots, 1 / 2)}_{m}], \quad \zeta^{\prime}:=[\underbrace{(-1 / 2,1 / 2, \ldots, 1 / 2)}_{m}] .
$$

Let $v_{m}:=(2,0, \ldots, 0) \in D_{m}$. Then the divisibility of $v_{m}$ is even (equal to 2 unless $m=1$ ) and $\left[v_{m} / 2\right]=\xi$. Moreover, if $u \in D_{m}$ has even divisibility and $[u / 2]=\xi$, then $u^{2} \leqslant-4=v_{m}^{2}$. Similarly, let

$$
w_{m}:= \begin{cases}(1, \ldots, 1) \in D_{m} & \text { if } m \text { is even } \\ (2, \ldots, 2) \in D_{m} & \text { if } m \text { is odd }\end{cases}
$$

Then $w_{m}^{*}=\zeta$ and, if $u \in D_{m}$ is such that $u^{*}=\zeta$, then

$$
u^{2} \leqslant w_{m}^{2}= \begin{cases}-m=w_{m}^{2} & \text { if } m \text { is even } \\ -4 m=w_{m}^{2} & \text { if } m \text { is odd }\end{cases}
$$

Since the map $\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{m}\right) \mapsto\left(-x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{m}\right)$ defines an automorphism of $D_{m}$ interchanging $\zeta$ with $\zeta^{\prime}$, an analogous result holds for the minimal absolute value of $u^{2}$ for vectors $u \in D_{m}$ such that $u^{*}=\zeta^{\prime}$. This fact has the following interesting consequence. Suppose that $\Lambda \subset \mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ is a saturated sublattice and that one of the following holds:
(1) $\Lambda^{\perp} \cong D_{26-N}$ and $N \in\{6,14\}$; or
(2) $\Lambda^{\perp} \cong\left(E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}\right)$ and $N=6$.

Although there is no preferred decoration of the abstract dimension- $N D$-lattice $\Lambda$ (because $q_{\Lambda}(\eta) \equiv 1(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$ for all non-zero $\left.\zeta \in A_{\Lambda}\right)$, there is a preferred decoration determined by the embedding $\Lambda \subset \mathrm{I}_{2,26}$, namely $\eta:=g(\xi)$, where $g$ is the isomorphism in (3.2.5), and $\xi \in A_{\Lambda^{\perp}}$ is the unique class for which there exists $v \in \Lambda^{\perp}$ of square -4 and even divisibility such that $[v / 2]=\xi$.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Definition 3.2.8. Let $\Lambda \subset \mathrm{I}_{2,26}$ be a saturated sublattice such that $\Lambda^{\perp}$ is isomorphic to $D_{26-N}$ or to $\left(E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}\right)$ (hence $\Lambda$ is a dimension- $N D$-lattice by Lemma 3.2.4). A decoration $\eta$ of $\Lambda$ is admissible if $\eta=g(\xi)$, where $g$ is the isomorphism in (3.2.5) and $\xi \in A_{\Lambda^{\perp}}$ is a class for which there exists $v \in \Lambda^{\perp}$ of square -4 and even divisibility such that $[v / 2]=\xi$.

Remark 3.2.9. If $N \not \equiv 6(\bmod 8)$, the unique decoration of $\Lambda$ is admissible, if $N=22$, all three decorations of $\Lambda$ are admissible (any non-zero element of $D_{4}$ is equal to $[v / 2]$ for a suitable $v \in \Lambda$ of square -4 and even divisibility), and if $N \in\{6,14\}$, then only one of the three decorations is admissible; see Remark 3.2.7.
3.2.3 The pre-Heegner divisors associated to the quasi-pull-backs of $\Phi_{12}$. The following result will allow us to determine the vectors $\nu(\delta)$ which appear in Remark 3.2.3 for the two embeddings of $\Lambda_{N}$ into $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ given by Lemma 3.2.4.

Proposition 3.2.10. Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$. Assume that $\Lambda \subset \mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ is a saturated sublattice and that $\Lambda^{\perp}$ is isomorphic to $D_{26-N}$ or to $E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}$ (in the latter case, $N \leqslant 17$ ) and hence $\Lambda$ is a dimension- $N$ D-lattice by Lemma 3.2.4. Suppose that $\delta \in R\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,26} \backslash \Lambda^{\perp}\right)$ is such that $\left\langle\Lambda^{\perp}, \delta\right\rangle$ is negative definite. Then $\nu(\delta)$ (notation as in Remark 3.2.3) is a minimal norm vector of $\Lambda$ (see Definition 1.3.7). Moreover, one of the following holds:
(a) $\nu(\delta)^{2}=-2$;
(b) $\nu(\delta)^{2}=-4, \operatorname{div}_{\Lambda}(\nu(\delta))=2$, and $\nu(\delta)^{*}$ is an admissible decoration of $\Lambda$;
(c) $\nu(\delta)^{2}=-4$ and $\operatorname{div}_{\Lambda}(\nu(\delta))=4$;
(d) $\Lambda^{\perp} \cong D_{26-N}$ and $19 \leqslant N$;
(e) $\Lambda^{\perp} \cong\left(E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}\right)$ and $11 \leqslant N$.

Proof. Let $m$ be the minimum strictly positive integer such that $m \delta \in\left(\Lambda \oplus \Lambda^{\perp}\right)$. Thus,

$$
m \delta=v+w, \quad 0 \neq v \in \Lambda, w \in \Lambda^{\perp}
$$

and $m \in\{1,2,4\}$; see Remark 3.2.5. Notice that $v \in\langle\nu(\delta)\rangle$ and $\nu(\delta)= \pm v$ if and only if $v$ is primitive. Let us prove that one of the following items holds:
(1) $m=1, v^{2}=-2$, and $\nu(\delta)= \pm v$;
(2) $m=2, v^{2} \in\{-2,-6\}, \operatorname{div}_{\Lambda}(v)=2$, and $\nu(\delta)= \pm v$;
(3) $m=2, v^{2}=-4, \operatorname{div}_{\Lambda}(v)=2, \nu(\delta)= \pm v$, and $\nu(\delta)^{*}$ is an admissible decoration of $\Lambda$;
(4) $m=2, v^{2}=-4, \operatorname{div}_{\Lambda}(v)=4$, and $\nu(\delta)= \pm v$;
(5) $m=4, N$ is odd, $v^{2}=-4 a$, where $a$ is the residue modulo 8 of $(N-2), \operatorname{div}_{\Lambda}(v)=4$, and $\nu(\delta)= \pm v$.
We have $\nu(\delta)^{2}<0$ because $\left\langle\Lambda_{N}^{\perp}, \delta\right\rangle$ is negative definite and hence $v^{2}<0$. Since $-2 m^{2}=(m \delta)^{2}=$ $v^{2}+w^{2}$, one of the following holds:
(i) $m=1, v^{2}=-2$ and $\nu(\delta)= \pm v$;
(ii) $m=2, v^{2} \in\{-2,-4,-6\}, \nu(\delta)= \pm v$, and $\operatorname{div}_{\Lambda}(v)$ is either 2 or 4 ;
(iii) $m=4, v^{2} \in\{-2,-4,-6,-8, \ldots,-30\}, \nu(\delta)= \pm v$, and $\operatorname{div}_{\Lambda}(v)=4$;
(iv) $m=4, v^{2} \in\{-8,-16,-18,-24\}$, and $v$ is not primitive.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

If (i) holds, then Item (1) holds.
Suppose that (ii) holds. If $v^{2}=-2$, then Item (2) holds. If $v^{2}=-6$, then by a discriminant quadratic form computation (see (1.1.2) and Claim 1.1.1) we get that $\operatorname{div}_{\Lambda_{N}}(v)=2$ and hence Item (2) holds. If $v^{2}=-4$ and $\operatorname{div}_{\Lambda_{N}}(v)=4$, then Item (4) holds. Thus, we are left with the case $v^{2}=-4$ and $\operatorname{div}_{\Lambda_{N}}(v)=2$. Since $m=2$, the divisibility of $w$ in $\Lambda^{\perp}$ is even and hence $[w / 2] \in A_{\Lambda^{\perp}}$. Since $g([w / 2])=[v / 2]$, where $g$ is the isomorphism in (3.2.5) and $w^{2}=-4$, it follows that $[v / 2]=\nu(\delta)^{*}$ is an admissible decoration. Thus, Item (3) holds. This finishes the proof that if (ii) holds, then one of Items (2), (3), and (4) holds.

If (iii) holds, then, by looking at the discriminant quadratic form of $\Lambda_{N}$, we get that $v^{2}=-4 a$, where $a \in\{1,3,5,7\}$ and $a \equiv(N-2)(\bmod 8)$. Thus, Item (5) holds.

Lastly, suppose that (iv) holds. We will arrive at a contradiction. First, let us show that $w$ is primitive. If $v^{2}=-18$, this is clear because $w^{2}=-14$. If $v^{2} \in\{-8,-16,-24\}$, then $v=2 u$, where $u \in \Lambda^{\perp}$ (because by assumption $v$ is not primitive) and, if $w=r z$ with $r \geqslant 2$ and $z \in \Lambda^{\perp}$, then $r=2$ because $w^{2} \in\{-24,-16,-8\}$. Then $2 \delta=u+z$, contradicting our hypothesis. This proves that $w$ is primitive. Since the divisibility of $w$ in $\Lambda^{\perp}$ is a multiple of 4 , it follows that $\operatorname{div}_{\Lambda^{\perp}}(w)=4$ and hence $N$ is odd. Thus, $w^{2} / 16=q_{\Lambda^{\perp}}\left(w^{*}\right) \equiv-(N-2) / 4(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$ and hence $w^{2}=-4 a$, where $a$ is odd. This is a contradiction because $w^{2} \in\{-24,-16,-14,-8\}$.

Now we finish the proof of the proposition. First, if any one of Items (1)-(5) holds, $\nu(\delta)$ is a minimal norm vector.

It remains to prove that if Item (2) holds with $v^{2}=-6$, or if Item (5) holds, then Item (d) or Item (e) of the proposition holds. We will assume that $\Lambda^{\perp} \cong D_{26-N}$ if $\Lambda^{\perp} \cong\left(E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}\right)$ is analogous.

Suppose that Item (2) holds with $v^{2}=-6$. Since $q_{\Lambda_{N}}\left(v^{*}\right) \equiv-3 / 2(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$, we have $N \equiv 0$ $(\bmod 8)$; it follows that $\Lambda^{\perp} \cong D_{26-N}=D_{2+8 h}$ for $h \in\{0,1,2\}$. The divisibility of $w$ as an element of $\Lambda^{\perp}$ is even because $m=2$ and hence it is equal to 2 (e.g. because $w^{2}=-2$ ). Now $q_{\Lambda_{N}^{\perp}}\left(w^{*}\right) \equiv-1 / 2(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$ and hence $w^{*} \in\left\{\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\}$, where notation is as in Remark 3.2.7. Since $w^{2}=-2$, it follows from Remark 3.2.7 that $\Lambda^{\perp} \cong D_{2}$, i.e. $N=24$.

Lastly, suppose that Item (5) holds. Then $w^{2}=-4(8-a)$ and $\operatorname{div}_{\Lambda^{\perp}}(w)=4$. Thus, $q_{\Lambda^{\perp}}\left(w^{*}\right) \equiv$ $-(8-a) / 4(\bmod 2 \mathbb{Z})$ and hence $w^{*} \in\left\{\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\}$, with notation as in Remark 3.2.7. On the other hand, $\Lambda^{\perp} \cong D_{8-a+h}$, where $h \geqslant 0$. Since $w^{2}=-(8-a)$, it follows from Remark 3.2.7 that $h=0$, i.e. $N \geqslant 19$.

### 3.2.4 Borcherds' automorphic forms for $\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)$.

Theorem 3.2.11. Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$. Let $\Lambda_{N} \subset \mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ be a saturated embedding with orthogonal complement isomorphic to $D_{26-N}$. Let $\xi \in A_{\Lambda_{N}}$ be an admissible decoration of $\Lambda_{N}$ (see Definition 3.2.8) and let $\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}$ be the remaining non-zero elements of $A_{\Lambda_{N}}$. Let $\Psi_{N}$ be the quasi-pull-back of Borcherds' automorphic form $\Phi_{12}$. Then $\Psi_{N}$ has weight $(12+(26-N)$ $(25-N))$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{div}\left(\Psi_{N}\right)=\mathscr{H}_{0}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+2(26-N) \mathscr{H}_{\xi}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+\mu(N)\left(\mathscr{H}_{\zeta}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+\mathscr{H}_{\zeta^{\prime}}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right), \tag{3.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mu(N)$ is as in Table 1 .
Theorem 3.2.12. Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 17$. Let $\Lambda_{N} \subset \mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ be a saturated embedding with orthogonal complement isomorphic to $E_{8} \oplus D_{18-N}$. Let $\xi \in A_{\Lambda_{N}}$ be an admissible decoration of $\Lambda_{N}$ (see Definition 3.2.8) and let $\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}$ be the remaining non-zero elements of $A_{\Lambda_{N}}$. Let $\Xi_{N}$ be the quasi-pull-back of Borcherds' automorphic form $\Phi_{12}$. Then $\Xi_{N}$ has weight $(132+(18-N)(17-N))$

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{div}\left(\Xi_{N}\right)=\mathscr{H}_{0}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+2(18-N) \mathscr{H}_{\xi}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+\mu(N+8)\left(\mathscr{H}_{\zeta}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+\mathscr{H}_{\zeta^{\prime}}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right) . \tag{3.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Before proving the above results, we introduce some notation.
Notation 3.2.13 (Extended exceptional series $E_{r}$ ). It is standard (e.g. in the context of del Pezzo surfaces; cf. [FM02]) to extend the $E_{r}$ series for $r<6$ as follows. Let $(1) \oplus(-1)^{r}$ be $\mathbb{Z}^{r+1}$ with the quadratic form $q\left(x, y_{1}, \ldots, y_{r}\right):=x^{2}-\sum_{i=1}^{r} y_{i}^{2}$. Then $E_{r}$ is the sublattice of $(1) \oplus(-1)^{r}$ defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{r}:=(3, \underbrace{1, \ldots, 1}_{r})^{\perp} \subset(1) \oplus(-1)^{r} \text {. } \tag{3.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Of course, this is the usual $E_{r}$ for $r \in\{6,7,8\}$, and $E_{5}=D_{5}, E_{4}=A_{4}$, and $E_{3}=A_{2} \oplus A_{1}$. The lattice $E_{2}$ has Gram matrix $\left(\begin{array}{cc}-4 & 1 \\ 1 & -2\end{array}\right)$ and is no longer a root lattice. We record for later use the cardinalities of the sets of roots of the $E_{r}$ lattices:

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left|R\left(E_{2}\right)\right|=2, \quad\left|R\left(E_{3}\right)\right|=8, \quad\left|R\left(E_{4}\right)\right|=20, \quad\left|R\left(E_{5}\right)\right|=40, \\
\left|R\left(E_{6}\right)\right|=72, \quad\left|R\left(E_{7}\right)\right|=126, \quad\left|R\left(E_{8}\right)\right|=240 . \tag{3.2.9}
\end{gather*}
$$

Proof of Theorem 3.2.11. The weight is equal to $12+\left|R\left(\Lambda_{N}^{\perp}\right)\right| / 2=12+(26-N)(25-N)$ by Recipe 3.2.2 (recall that $\left|R\left(D_{m}\right)\right|=2 m(m-1)$ ). Next, choose minimal norm vectors $v_{0}, v_{\xi}, v_{\zeta}$, $v_{\zeta^{\prime}} \in \Lambda_{N}$ representing $0, \xi, \zeta, \zeta^{\prime} \in A_{\Lambda_{N}}$, respectively (i.e. $v_{0}^{*}=0, v_{\xi}^{*}=\xi$, etc.). For $\eta \in A_{\Lambda_{N}}$, let

$$
a_{\eta}(N):=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left|R\left(\operatorname{Sat}\left\langle v_{\eta}, \Lambda_{N}^{\perp}\right\rangle\right)\right|-\left|R\left(\Lambda_{N}^{\perp}\right)\right|\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left|R\left(\operatorname{Sat}\left\langle v_{\eta}, \Lambda_{N}^{\perp}\right\rangle\right)\right|-\frac{1}{2}(26-N)(25-N) .
$$

By Recipe 3.2.2, (3.2.3), and Proposition 3.2.10,

$$
\operatorname{div}\left(\Psi_{N}\right)=a_{0}(N) \mathscr{H}_{0}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+a_{\xi}(N) \mathscr{H}_{\xi}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+a_{\zeta}(N) \mathscr{H}_{\zeta}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+a_{\zeta^{\prime}}(N) \mathscr{H}_{\zeta^{\prime}}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)
$$

(Of course, by Proposition 3.2.10, $0=a_{\zeta}(N)=a_{\zeta^{\prime}}(N)$ if $N \leqslant 18$ and $N \notin\{3,4,11,12\}$.) It is clear that $\operatorname{Sat}\left\langle v_{0}, \Lambda_{N}^{\perp}\right\rangle=\left\langle v_{0}, \Lambda_{N}^{\perp}\right\rangle$ and hence $a_{0}(N)=1$. In order to compute $a_{\xi}(N), a_{\zeta}(N)$, and $a_{\zeta^{\prime}}(N)$, we will refer to the embedding $\Lambda_{N} \subset \mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ of Remark 3.2.5. Thus, we let $(N-2)=8 k+a$, where $k \geqslant 0, a \in\{1, \ldots, 8\}$, and we identify $\Lambda_{N}$ with $\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{a}$. Notice that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\xi:=[(0_{4+8 k},(\underbrace{1,0, \ldots, 0}_{a}), 0_{26-N})] \in A_{\Lambda_{N}} \tag{3.2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

is an admissible decoration of $\Lambda_{N}$ with respect to the embedding of Remark 3.2.5. We choose the minimal norm vector $v_{\xi}:=\left(0_{4+8 k},(2,0, \ldots, 0), 0_{26-N}\right)$ (if $N=3$, we let $v_{\xi}:=(2 e,(2,0, \ldots, 0)$, $0_{26-N}$ ), where $e \in \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}$ is primitive and isotropic). Then the saturation of $\left\langle v_{\xi}, \Lambda_{N}^{\perp}\right\rangle$ is generated by $\left\langle v_{\xi}, \Lambda_{N}^{\perp}\right\rangle$ and the vector $u_{3}$ of Remark 3.2.5 (if $N=3$, we add $(e,(1,0, \ldots, 0),(1,0, \ldots, 0))$ ). It follows that $\operatorname{Sat}\left\langle v_{\xi}, \Lambda_{N}^{\perp}\right\rangle$ is isomorphic to $D_{27-N}$ and hence $a_{\xi}(N)=2(26-N)$. We choose the minimal norm vector

$$
v_{\zeta}:= \begin{cases}(0_{4+8 k},(\underbrace{1, \ldots, 1}_{a}), 0_{26-N}) & \text { if } N \text { is even, } \\ (0_{4+8 k},(\underbrace{2, \ldots, 2}_{a}), 0_{26-N}) & \text { if } N \text { is odd. }\end{cases}
$$

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

By Proposition 3.2.10, $a_{\zeta}(N)=0$, unless $19 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$, or $a \in\{1,2\}$ and $N \in\{3,4,11,12\}$. Assume first that $19 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$. Then $a \in\{1, \ldots, 7\}$ and $\Lambda_{N}^{\perp}=D_{26-N}=D_{8-a}$. The saturation of $\left\langle v_{\zeta}, D_{8-a}\right\rangle$ is generated by $\left\langle v_{\zeta}, D_{8-a}\right\rangle$ together with the vector $u_{1}$ of Remark 3.2.5; it follows easily that $\operatorname{Sat}\left\langle v_{\zeta}, D_{8-a}\right\rangle \cong E_{9-a}$. Noting that $a=N-18$, we get that $\operatorname{Sat}\left\langle v_{\zeta}, \Lambda_{N}^{\perp}\right\rangle \cong E_{27-N}$. Looking at (3.2.9), we get that $a_{\zeta}(N)=\mu(N)$.

Next, suppose that $a=1$ and hence $N \in\{3,11\}$. The saturation of $\left\langle v_{\zeta}, D_{23-8 k}\right\rangle$ is the overlattice $D_{(3-k) 8}^{+}$of $D_{(3-k) 8}$ obtained by adjoining the vector $(1 / 2, \ldots, 1 / 2)$. Then $a_{\zeta}(N)=$ $\mu(N)$ follows from the equality $\left|R\left(D_{(3-k) 8}\right)^{+}\right|=\left|R\left(D_{(3-k) 8}\right)\right|=2 \cdot(24-8 k) \cdot(23-8 k)$, valid for $k \in\{0,1\}$.

Next, suppose that $a=2$ and hence $N \in\{4,12\}$. The saturation of $\left\langle v_{\zeta}, D_{22-8 k}\right\rangle$ is generated by $\left\langle v_{\zeta}, D_{22-8 k}\right\rangle$ together with the vector $u_{1}$ of Remark 3.2.5; one verifies easily that the roots of $\operatorname{Sat}\left\langle v_{\zeta}, D_{22-8 k}\right\rangle$ are exactly $\pm\left(0_{4+8 k},(1,1), 0_{26-N}\right)$ and hence $a_{\zeta}(N)=1=\mu(N)$.

Lastly, $a_{\zeta^{\prime}}(N)=a_{\zeta}(N)$ because there is an automorphism of $\mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ mapping $\Lambda_{N}$ to itself and exchanging $\zeta$ and $\zeta^{\prime}$.

Proof of Theorem 3.2.12. The proof is analogous to that of Theorem 3.2.11; we leave details to the reader.
3.2.5 Borcherds' relations for divisors on $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{N}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)$ and on $\mathscr{F}(N)$. We let $\lambda\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)$ be the Hodge orbifold line bundle on $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{N}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)$.

Lemma 3.2.14. Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$. Let $\xi$ be a decoration of $\Lambda_{N}$ and let $\zeta, \zeta^{\prime} \in A_{\Lambda_{N}}$ be the remaining non-zero elements. Then in $\operatorname{Pic}\left(\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{N}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)\right)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ we have the relation

$$
\begin{align*}
& 2(12+(26-N)(25-N)) \lambda\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right) \\
& \quad=H_{0}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+\epsilon(N) 2(26-N) H_{\xi}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+\tau(N) \mu(N)\left(H_{\zeta}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+H_{\zeta^{\prime}}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right) \tag{3.2.11}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\epsilon(N)$ is equal to 1 if $N$ is odd and is equal to 2 if $N$ is even, while $\tau(N)$ is equal to 1 if $N \equiv 3,4(\bmod 8)$ and is equal to 2 otherwise.

Proof. Let $\Lambda_{N} \subset \mathrm{II}_{2,26}$ be a saturated embedding such that the decoration $\xi$ is admissible (see Definition 3.2.8). Let $\Psi_{N}$ be the automorphic form in Theorem 3.2.11. If $k \in \mathbb{N}_{+}$is sufficiently divisible, then $\Psi_{N}^{k}$ descends to a regular section $\sigma_{N}(k)$ of $\lambda\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)^{k(12+(26-N)(25-N))}$, whose zero divisor pulls back to $k$ times the right-hand side of (3.2.6). Taking into account Claim 1.3.13, one gets that $\operatorname{div}\left(\sigma_{N}(k)\right)$ is equal to $k$ times the right-hand side of (3.2.11). Dividing by $k$, we get (3.2.11).

Proposition 3.2.15 ( $=$ Theorem 3.1.1). Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 25$. Then in $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{F}(N))_{\mathbb{Q}}$ we have the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
2(12+(26-N)(25-N)) \lambda(N)=H_{n}(N)+2(26-N) H_{h}(N)+\tau(N) \mu(N) H_{u}(N) \tag{3.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tau(N)$ is as in Lemma 3.2.14. If $N \in\{6,14\}$, we also have the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
2(12+(26-N)(25-N)) \lambda(N)=H_{n}(N)+2(26-N) H_{u}(N) . \tag{3.2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. If $N$ is odd, $\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{N}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)=\mathscr{F}(N)$, and (3.2.12) is simply a rewriting of (3.2.11).
Let $N$ be even and let $\rho: \mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{N}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right) \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(N)$ be the natural double covering map corresponding to the choice of decoration of $\Lambda_{N}$ given by $\xi($ the only one if $N \not \equiv 6(\bmod 8))$.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Then (3.2.12) is given by the push-forward by $\rho$ of (3.2.11). More precisely, $\rho_{*} \lambda\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)=$ $2 \lambda(N)$ because $\rho^{*} \lambda(N)=\lambda\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)$ and Corollary 1.3.12 gives formulae for $\rho_{*}$ of the Heegner divisors in the right-hand side of (3.2.11).

Now assume that $N \in\{6,14\}$ and choose the decoration of $\Lambda_{N}$ to be $\zeta$; then (3.2.13) is given by the push-forward by $\rho$ of (3.2.11).

Corollary 3.2.16. If $N \in\{6,14\}$, then in $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{F}(N))_{\mathbb{Q}}$ we have the relation $H_{h}(N)=H_{u}(N)$. Proof. Subtract (3.2.13) from (3.2.12).

Starting from Theorem 3.2.12, and arguing as in the proof of Lemma 3.2.14 and Proposition 3.2.15, one gets the following results.

Lemma 3.2.17. Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 17$. Let $\xi$ be a decoration of $\Lambda_{N}$ and let $\zeta, \zeta^{\prime} \in A_{\Lambda_{N}}$ be the remaining non-zero elements. Then in $\operatorname{Pic}\left(\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda_{N}}\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right)\right)_{\mathbb{Q}}$ we have the relation

$$
\begin{align*}
& 2(132+(18-N)(17-N)) \lambda\left(\widetilde{O}^{+}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right) \\
& \quad=H_{0}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+\epsilon(N) 2(18-N) H_{\xi}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+\tau(N) \mu(N+8)\left(H_{\zeta}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)+H_{\zeta^{\prime}}\left(\Lambda_{N}\right)\right) \tag{3.2.14}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\epsilon(N)$ and $\tau(N)$ are as in Lemma 3.2.14.
Proposition 3.2.18 ( $=$ Theorem 3.1.2). Let $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 17$. Then in $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{F}(N))_{\mathbb{Q}}$ we have the relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
2(132+(18-N)(17-N)) \lambda(N)=H_{n}(N)+2(18-N) H_{h}(N)+\tau(N) \mu(N+8) H_{u}(N), \tag{3.2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tau(N)$ is as in Lemma 3.2.14.

## 4. The boundary divisor $\Delta\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$

### 4.1 Statement of results

In $\S 2$, we have identified $\mathscr{F}(19)$ with the period space of quartic $K 3$ surfaces. Let $\mathfrak{M}(19)$ be the GIT moduli space of quartic surfaces in $\mathbb{P}^{3}$; then the natural period map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{p}_{19}: \mathfrak{M}(19) \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(19)^{*} \tag{4.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

is birational by the global Torelli theorem for $K 3$ surfaces (by Piatetsky-Shapiro and Shafarevich). The projective variety $\mathfrak{M}(19)=\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right| / / \mathrm{PGL}(4)$ has Picard group (tensored with $\mathbb{Q})$ of rank 1 ; let $L(19)$ be the generator of $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathfrak{M}(19))_{\mathbb{Q}}$ induced by the hyperplane line bundle on $\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right|$. In the present section, we will prove that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left(\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}\right)^{*} L(19)\right|_{\mathscr{F}(19)}=\lambda(19)+\Delta(19) \tag{4.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similar arguments also give that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left(\mathfrak{p}_{18}^{-1}\right)^{*} L(18)\right|_{\mathscr{F}(18)}=2(\lambda(18)+\Delta(18)) . \tag{4.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

These are the computations that motivate our choice of boundary divisor for $\mathscr{F}(N)$ (for any $N$ ).
Remark 4.1.1. Let $\mathfrak{M}(20)$ be the GIT moduli space of double EPW sextics, let $\delta$ be the duality involution of $\mathfrak{M}(20)$, and let $\mathfrak{p}_{20}: \mathfrak{M}(20) /\langle\delta\rangle \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(20)^{*}$ be the period map; see (2.3.4). Let $L(20)$ be an ample generator of the Picard group of $\mathfrak{M}(20) /\langle\delta\rangle$. We expect that a result similar to (4.1.2) holds for $\left.\left(\mathfrak{p}_{20}^{-1}\right)^{*} L(20)\right|_{\mathscr{F}(20)}$, namely that it is a positive multiple of $\lambda(20)+\Delta(20)$.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ Surfaces

An important result follows from (4.1.2). In order to state it, we introduce some notation. For $\beta \in[0,1] \cap \mathbb{Q}$, let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{R}(N, \beta):=\bigoplus_{m=0}^{\infty} H^{0}(\mathscr{F}(N), m(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))), \quad \mathscr{F}(N, \beta):=\operatorname{Proj} \mathscr{R}(N, \beta) . \tag{4.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

(As usual, $H^{0}(\mathscr{F}(N), m(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N)))=0$ unless $m(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))$ is an integral Cartier divisor.) Thus, $\mathscr{R}(N, 0)$ is the finitely generated algebra of automorphic forms and hence $\mathscr{F}(N, 0)$ is the Baily-Borel compactification $\mathscr{F}(N)^{*}$. If $3 \leqslant N \leqslant 10$, then, by (3.1.3), $\Delta(N)$ is a positive multiple of $\lambda(N)$ and hence in this range $\mathscr{F}(N, \beta)=\mathscr{F}(N)^{*}$ for all $\beta \in[0,1] \cap \mathbb{Q}$. On the other hand, we will see that if $N \geqslant 11$, then $\mathscr{F}(N, \beta)$ undergoes birational modifications as $\beta$ moves in $[0,1] \cap \mathbb{Q}$.

Now let $N \in\{18,19\}$ and let $\rho(N)$ be equal to 1 if $N=19$, and equal to 2 if $N=18$. Let $m \geqslant 0$ and let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\left.\mathfrak{p}_{N}^{-1}\right|_{\mathscr{F}(N)}\right)^{*}: H^{0}(\mathfrak{M}(N), m L(N)) \longrightarrow H^{0}(\mathscr{F}(N), m \rho(N)(\lambda(N)+\Delta(N))) \tag{4.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

be the map induced by (4.1.2) if $N=19$ and by (4.1.3) if $N=18$. The following result should be compared to Theorem 8.6 of [Loo03b].

Proposition 4.1.2. Let $N \in\{18,19\}$. Then the map in (4.1.5) is an isomorphism for all $m \in \mathbb{Z}$.
Proof. The map is clearly injective. In order to prove surjectivity, it suffices to show that $\mathfrak{p}_{N}$ contracts no divisor. In order to prove this, let $\mathscr{U}(19) \subset\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right|$ and $\mathscr{U}(18) \subset\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{\times} \mathbb{P}^{1}}(4,4)\right|$ be the open subsets of Definition 2.1.5 and of Definition 2.2.3, respectively. The period maps $\mathfrak{p}_{N}$, for $N \in\{18,19\}$, define isomorphisms between $\mathscr{U}(N) / / G(N)$ (where $G(19)=\mathrm{PGL}(4)$ and $\left.G(18)=\operatorname{Aut}\left(\mathbb{P}^{1} \times \mathbb{P}^{1}\right)\right)$ and the complement of the support of $\Delta(N)$; see (2.1.4) and (2.2.2). On the other hand, the complement of $\mathscr{U}(N) / / G(N)$ in $\mathfrak{M}(N)$ has codimension greater than 1 . Thus, $\mathfrak{p}_{N}$ contracts no divisor, as claimed.

By Proposition 4.1.2, there is an isomorphism

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{F}(N, 1) \cong \mathfrak{M}(N) \quad \text { if } N \in\{18,19\} \tag{4.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, for $N \in\{18,19\}$, the schemes $\mathscr{F}(N, \beta)$ interpolate between the Baily-Borel compactification $\mathscr{F}(N)^{*}$ and the GIT moduli space $\mathfrak{M}(N)$.

### 4.2 Families of K3 surfaces

4.2.1 Hodge bundle on families of $K 3$ surfaces. Let $f: \mathscr{X} \rightarrow B$ be a family of $K 3$ surfaces. We let $\mathscr{L}_{B}:=f_{*} \omega_{\mathscr{X} / B}$; this is the Hodge bundle on $B$ (the notation is imprecise because the Hodge bundle is determined by $f: \mathscr{X} \rightarrow B$, not by $B$ alone). We let $\lambda_{B}:=c_{1}\left(\mathscr{L}_{B}\right) \in \mathrm{CH}^{1}(B)$. Suppose that $\mathscr{X}$ is a family of polarized quartic $K 3$ surfaces and let $\mu: B \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(19)$ be the period map: then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu^{*} \lambda(19)=\lambda_{B} \tag{4.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose that $\mathscr{X}$ and $B$ are smooth. The exact sequence

$$
0 \longrightarrow f^{*} \Omega_{B} \xrightarrow{d f} \Omega_{\mathscr{X}} \longrightarrow \Omega_{\mathscr{X} / B} \longrightarrow 0
$$

and the isomorphism $f^{*} \mathscr{L}_{B} \cong \bigwedge^{2} \Omega_{\mathscr{X} / B}$ give the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
f^{*} \lambda_{B}=c_{1}\left(K_{\mathscr{X}}\right)-f^{*} c_{1}\left(K_{B}\right) . \tag{4.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Table 2. Intersection numbers of families of quartic $K 3$ surfaces.

|  | $\lambda(19)$ | $H_{n}(19)$ | $H_{h}(19)$ | $H_{u}(19)$ |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\mu_{1, *}\left(\Gamma_{1}\right)$ | 1 | 108 | 0 | 0 |
| $\mu_{2, *}\left(\Gamma_{2}\right)$ | 1 | 136 | -2 | 0 |
| $\mu_{3, *}\left(\Gamma_{3}\right)$ | 1 | 264 | 0 | -2 |

4.2.2 Families of quartic surfaces. Let $F, G \in \mathbb{C}\left[x_{0}, \ldots, x_{3}\right]_{4}$ be linearly independent and such that $\Gamma_{1}:=\langle\operatorname{Div}(F), \operatorname{Div}(G)\rangle$ is a Lefschetz pencil of quartic surfaces. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{X}_{1}:=\left\{([\alpha, \beta],[x]) \in \Gamma_{1} \times \mathbb{P}^{3} \mid \alpha F(x)+\beta G(x)=0\right\} . \tag{4.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The projection onto the second factor is a family $f_{1}: \mathscr{X}_{1} \rightarrow \Gamma_{1}$ of polarized quartic surfaces.
Now let us we define a one-parameter family of hyperelliptic $K 3$ surfaces. Let $\Gamma_{2}:=\mathbb{P}^{1}$. Let $D \in\left|\mathscr{O}_{\Gamma_{2}}(2) \boxtimes \mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1} \times \mathbb{P}^{1}}(4,4)\right|$ be generic and let $\rho: \mathscr{X}_{2} \rightarrow \Gamma_{2} \times\left(\mathbb{P}^{1}\right)^{2}$ be the double cover branched over $D$. Let $f_{2}: \mathscr{X}_{2} \rightarrow \Gamma_{2}$ be the composition of the double cover map $\rho$ and the projection $\Gamma_{2} \times\left(\mathbb{P}^{1}\right)^{2} \rightarrow \Gamma_{2}$. Let $t \in \Gamma_{2}$; then $X_{2, t}:=f_{2}^{-1}(t)$ is the double cover of $\mathbb{P}^{1} \times \mathbb{P}^{1}$ branched over the $(4,4)$-curve $D_{t}:=\left.D\right|_{\{t\} \times\left(\mathbb{P}^{1}\right)^{2}}$. Thus, $X_{2, t}$ is a $K 3$ surface, $\rho^{*}\left(\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(1) \boxtimes \mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{1}}(1)\right)$ restricts to a polarization of $X_{2, t}$, and with this polarization $X_{2, t}$ is a quartic hyperelliptic $K 3$ surface. From here on we assume that the pencil of branch curves $D_{t}$, for $t \in \Gamma_{2}$, is a Lefschetz pencil.

Next, we define a one-parameter family of unigonal $K 3$ surfaces. Let $Y:=\mathbb{P}\left(\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{2}}(4) \oplus \mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{2}}\right)$. Let $\varphi: Y \rightarrow \mathbb{P}^{2}$ be the structure map and $F:=\varphi^{-1}$ (line). Let $A:=\mathbb{P}\left(\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{2}}(4)\right) \subset Y$. Adjunction on $F \cong \mathbb{F}_{4}$ gives that

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{Y} \equiv-2 A-7 F . \tag{4.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $B \in|3 A+12 F|$ be generic; in particular, it is smooth and it does not intersect $A$. Let $\pi: Z \rightarrow Y$ be the double cover branched over $A+B$. If $F$ is as above and generic, then $\pi^{-1} F$ is a smooth unigonal $K 3$ surface. We get a family of such $K 3$ surfaces by choosing a generic $\mathscr{X}_{3} \in\left|\mathscr{O}_{Z}\left(\pi^{*} F\right) \boxtimes \mathscr{O}_{\Gamma_{3}}(1)\right|$, where $\Gamma_{3}=\mathbb{P}^{1}$. In fact, let $f_{3}: \mathscr{X}_{3} \rightarrow \Gamma_{3}$ be the restriction of projection and let $t \in \Gamma_{3}$. The surface $X_{3, t}:=f_{3}^{-1}(t)$ is equal to $\pi^{-1}\left(\varphi^{-1}\left(L_{t}\right)\right)$, where $L_{t} \subset \mathbb{P}^{2}$ is a line (as $t$ moves in $\Gamma_{3}$, the line $L_{t}$ moves in a pencil) and $\varphi^{-1}\left(L_{t}\right)$ is isomorphic to $\mathbb{F}_{4}$. The restriction $\pi_{t}: X_{3, t} \rightarrow \varphi^{-1}\left(L_{t}\right)$ is a double cover and one checks easily that $X_{3, t}:=f_{3}^{-1}(t)$ is a $K 3$ surface. Let $A_{t}$ be the negative section of $\varphi^{-1}\left(L_{t}\right) \cong \mathbb{F}_{4}$; then $\pi_{t}^{*} A_{t}=2 R_{t}$, where $R_{t}$ is a (smooth) rational curve. Let $E_{t}:=\pi_{t}^{*} F_{t}$, where $F_{t}$ is a fiber of the fibration $\varphi^{-1}\left(L_{t}\right) \cong \mathbb{F}_{4} \rightarrow L_{t}$. Then $R_{t}+3 E_{t}$ is a polarization of degree 4 of $X_{3, t}$ and ( $X_{3, t}, R_{t}+3 E_{t}$ ) is unigonal.

For $i \in\{1,2,3\}$, we have period maps

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Gamma_{i} \xrightarrow{\mu_{i}} \mathscr{F}(19) . \tag{4.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 4.2.1. The intersection formulae of Table 2 hold.
Proof. First of all, notice that

$$
\mu_{i, *} \Gamma_{i} \cdot \lambda(19)=\Gamma_{i} \cdot \mu_{i, *} \lambda(19)=\operatorname{deg} \lambda_{\Gamma_{i}}
$$

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ Surfaces

Next, one computes deg $\lambda_{\Gamma_{i}}$ by applying (4.2.2). The intersection number $\mu_{i, *} \Gamma_{i} \cdot H_{n}(19)$ is equal to the number, call it $\delta\left(\Gamma_{i}\right)$, of singular fibers of $f_{i}$ because $f_{i}$ is a Lefschetz fibration. The formula that gives $\delta\left(\Gamma_{i}\right)$ is the following:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta\left(\Gamma_{i}\right)=2 \chi_{\mathrm{top}}(K 3)-\chi_{\mathrm{top}}\left(\mathscr{X}_{i}\right)=48-\chi_{\mathrm{top}}\left(\mathscr{X}_{i}\right) . \tag{4.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, it suffices to compute the Euler characteristic of $\mathscr{X}_{i}$; we leave details to the reader. The intersection numbers of the third and fourth columns are obtained as follows. First, $\emptyset=\mu_{1}\left(\Gamma_{1}\right) \cap H_{h}(19)=\mu_{1}\left(\Gamma_{1}\right) \cap H_{u}(19)$ by Proposition 2.2.1. Next, $\mu_{2}\left(\Gamma_{2}\right) \cap H_{u}(19)=\emptyset$ and $\mu_{3}\left(\Gamma_{3}\right) \cap H_{h}(19)=\emptyset$ by Lemma 1.7.3. The remaining numbers are obtained by applying Borcherds' relation for $N=19$, which reads

$$
\begin{equation*}
108 \lambda(19)=H_{n}(19)+14 H_{h}(19)+78 H_{u}(19), \tag{4.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

together with the computations that have already been proved.
Proposition 4.2.2. A basis of $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{F}(19))_{\mathbb{Q}}$ is provided by the choice of any three of the classes $\lambda(19), H_{n}(19), H_{h}(19), H_{u}(19)$. The space of linear relations among $\lambda(19), H_{n}(19), H_{h}(19)$, $H_{u}(19)$ is generated by Borcherds' relation (4.2.7).

Proof. Let $\mathscr{U}(19) \subset\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right|$ be the open subset of Definition 2.1.5. Then we have the isomorphism in (2.1.4). Now $\operatorname{CH}^{1}(\mathscr{U}(19) / / \operatorname{PGL}(4))_{\mathbb{Q}}=\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{U}(19) / / \mathrm{PGL}(4))_{\mathbb{Q}}$ (e.g. because $\mathscr{F}(19)$ is $\mathbb{Q}$-factorial) and $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{U}(19) / / \mathrm{PGL}(4))_{\mathbb{Q}}$ is isomorphic to the group of PGL(4)-linearized line bundles on $\mathscr{U}(19)$ (tensored with $\mathbb{Q}$ ), which is a subgroup of $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{U}(19))_{\mathbb{Q}}$ because PGL(4) has no non-trivial characters. On the other hand, $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{U}(19))_{\mathbb{Q}} \cong \mathbb{Q}$ because $\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right| \backslash \mathscr{U}(19)$ has codimension greater than 1 in $\left|\mathscr{P}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right|$. Thus, $\mathrm{CH}^{1}(\mathscr{U}(19) / / \mathrm{PGL}(4))_{\mathbb{Q}} \cong \mathbb{Q}$ and a generator is the class of the divisor parametrizing singular quartics. By (2.1.4), it follows that

$$
\mathrm{CH}^{1}\left(\mathscr{F}(19) \backslash\left(H_{h}(19) \cup H_{u}(19)\right)\right)_{\mathbb{Q}} \cong \mathbb{Q}
$$

and that the restriction of $H_{n}(19)$ is a generator. By the localization sequence associated to the inclusion of $\mathscr{F}(19) \backslash\left(H_{h}(19) \cup H_{u}(19)\right)$ into $\mathscr{F}(19)$, it follows that $\mathrm{CH}^{1}(\mathscr{F}(19))_{\mathbb{Q}}$ is generated by $H_{n}(19), H_{h}(19), H_{u}(19)$. Table 2 shows that $H_{n}(19), H_{h}(19), H_{u}(19)$ are linearly independent and also the remaining statements of the proposition.

Lastly, we define a family of quartic surfaces in $\mathbb{P}^{3}$ 'degenerating' to a hyperelliptic $K 3$ surface. Let $Q \in \mathbb{C}\left[x_{0}, \ldots, x_{3}\right]_{2}$ be a non-degenerate quadratic form and $G \in \mathbb{C}\left[x_{0}, \ldots, x_{3}\right]_{4}$ be such that $\operatorname{Div}(G)$ is transverse to $\operatorname{Div}(Q)$ and such that the pencil of quartics $B:=\left\langle\operatorname{Div}(G), \operatorname{Div}\left(Q^{2}\right)\right\rangle$ is a Lefschetz pencil away from $\operatorname{Div}\left(Q^{2}\right)$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{Y}:=\left\{([\lambda, \mu],[x]) \in B \times \mathbb{P}^{3} \mid \lambda Q^{2}(x)+\mu G(x)=0\right\} . \tag{4.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

The family $\mathscr{Y} \rightarrow B$ is a family of quartics away from the inverse image of $[1,0]$. Let $\Gamma_{4} \rightarrow B$ be the double cover branched over $[1,0]$ and $[0,1]$, and let $\mathscr{Y}_{4} \rightarrow \Gamma_{4}$ be the pull-back of $\mathscr{Y}$. Let $\mathscr{X}_{4}$ be the normalization of $\mathscr{\mathscr { G }}_{4}$; the natural map $f_{4}: \mathscr{X}_{4} \rightarrow \Gamma_{4}$ is a family of polarized quartic $K 3$ surfaces. Let $p \in \Gamma_{4}$ be the (unique) point mapping to $[1,0]$. The surface $f_{4}^{-1}(p)$ is the double cover of the smooth quadric $\operatorname{Div}(Q)$ branched over $V(Q, G)$, i.e. a hyperelliptic quartic $K 3$. If $t \in\left(\Gamma_{4} \backslash\{p\}\right)$, then $f_{4}^{-1}(t)$ is a non-hyperelliptic (and non-unigonal) quartic $K 3$. We have the period map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Gamma_{4} \xrightarrow{\mu_{4}} \mathscr{F}(19) . \tag{4.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Corollary 4.2.3. Keep notation as above. Then

$$
\mu_{4, *}\left(\Gamma_{3}\right) \cdot \lambda(19)=1, \quad \mu_{4, *}\left(\Gamma_{3}\right) \cdot H_{n}(19)=80, \quad \mu_{4, *}\left(\Gamma_{3}\right) \cdot H_{h}(19)=2, \quad \mu_{4, *}\left(\Gamma_{3}\right) \cdot H_{u}(19)=0
$$

Proof. Except for the second-to-last formula, these are obtained by arguments similar to those employed to obtain the formulae of Table 2. One gets the missing formula by applying Borcherds' formula (4.2.7).

Notice that the set-theoretic intersection $\mu_{4}\left(\Gamma_{3}\right) \cap H_{h}(19)$ consists of a single point, namely $\mu_{4}(p)$, and it counts with multiplicity $2 a$, for some $a>1$. In order to conclude that $\mu_{4, *}\left(\Gamma_{3}\right) \cdot H_{h}(19)=2$, one needs a non-trivial computation; we avoid this thanks to Borcherds' relation (4.2.7).

Remark 4.2.4. In the present subsection, we have invoked Borcherds' first relation in order to compute the degree of normal bundles. By employing the (elementary) results of $\S 5.3$, one can avoid the use of Borcherds' relations and in fact one can use the computations in this subsection in order to check the validity of Borcherds' first relation for $N=19$.

### 4.3 Proof of (4.1.2)

By Proposition 4.2.2, there exist $x, y, z \in \mathbb{Q}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left(\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}\right)^{*} L(19)\right|_{\mathscr{F}(19)}=x \lambda(19)+y H_{h}(19)+z H_{u}(19) . \tag{4.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will compute $x, y$ by equating the intersection numbers of the two sides with complete curves in $\mathscr{F}(19)$. For this to make sense, the complete curves must avoid the indeterminacy locus of $\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}$. Let $I(19)^{*} \subset \mathscr{F}(19)^{*}$ be the indeterminacy locus of $\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}$ and $I(19):=I(19)^{*} \cap \mathscr{F}(19)$ be the indeterminacy locus of $\left.\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}\right|_{\mathscr{F}(19)}$. By (2.1.4), $I(19)$ is contained in $H_{h}(19) \cup H_{u}(19)$. Since $\mathscr{F}(19)^{*}$ is normal, $I(19)$ has codimension at least 2 in $\mathscr{F}(19)$ and hence $I(19)=I_{h}(19) \sqcup I_{u}(19)$, where $I_{h}(19) \subset H_{h}(19)$ and $I_{u}(19) \subset H_{u}(19)$ are proper closed subsets (recall that $H_{h}(19) \cap$ $\left.H_{u}(19)=\emptyset\right)$. Now let $\mathscr{X}_{1} \rightarrow \Gamma_{1}$ and $\mathscr{X}_{4} \rightarrow \Gamma_{4}$ be the complete families defined in §4.2.2. Every surface $f_{1}^{-1}(t)$ is a stable quartic and similarly for $f_{4}^{-1}(t)$ if $t \neq p$, while the semistable quartic surface in $\mathbb{P}^{3}$ corresponding to $p$ is to be understood as the double quadric $2 V(Q)$. Let $\theta_{i}: \Gamma_{i} \rightarrow \mathfrak{M}(19)$ be the corresponding modular map for $i \in\{1,4\}$. The map $\mu_{i}: \Gamma_{i} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(19)$ considered in $\S 4.2 .2$ is equal to $\mathfrak{p}_{19} \circ \theta_{i}$. The curve $\mu_{1}\left(\Gamma_{1}\right)$ avoids the indeterminacy locus $I(19)$ because it is disjoint from $H_{h}(19) \cup H_{u}(19)$. On the other hand, the curve $\mu_{4}\left(\Gamma_{4}\right)$ intersects $H_{h}(19) \cup H_{u}(19)$ in a single point, namely $\mu_{4}(p)$, which belongs to $H_{h}(19)$. Since the double cover $f_{4}^{-1}(p) \rightarrow V(Q)$ has an arbitrary branch curve (among those with ADE singularities), we may assume that $\mu_{4}(p) \notin I_{h}(19)$. Thus,

$$
\mu_{i, *}\left(\Gamma_{i}\right) \cdot\left(\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}\right)^{*} L(19)=\theta_{i, *}\left(\Gamma_{i}\right) \cdot L(19)= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if } i=1, \\ 2 & \text { if } i=4\end{cases}
$$

Equation (4.3.1), together with Table 2 and Corollary 4.2.3, gives

$$
\mu_{i, *}\left(\Gamma_{i}\right) \cdot\left(\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}\right)^{*} L(19)= \begin{cases}x & \text { if } i=1 \\ x+2 y & \text { if } i=4\end{cases}
$$

It follows that $x=1$ and $y=1 / 2$. In order to prove that $z=1 / 2$, we will show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1} \text { is regular along } H_{u}(19) \text { (i.e. } I_{u}(19)=\emptyset \text { ). } \tag{4.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

First, $\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}$ is regular along the open dense $\left(H_{u}(19) \backslash I_{u}(19)\right) \subset H_{u}(19)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}\left(H_{u}(19) \backslash I_{u}(19)\right)=\{q\}, \tag{4.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $q \in \mathfrak{M}(19)$ is the point parametrizing the PGL(4)-orbit of the surface swept out by the tangents to a twisted cubic in $\mathbb{P}^{3}$ (a closed orbit in $\left.\left|\mathscr{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{3}}(4)\right|^{s s}\right)$; see [Sha81, Theorem 3.17]. Let $Z^{*} \subset \mathscr{F}(19)^{*} \times \mathfrak{M}(19)$ be the closure of the graph of the restriction of $\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}$ to its regular locus and $Z:=Z^{*} \cap(\mathscr{F}(19) \times \mathfrak{M}(19))$. Let $\pi: Z \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(19)$ be the projection; note that $\pi$ is a projective map. We must prove that $\pi$ is an isomorphism over $H_{u}(19)$. Assume the contrary, i.e. that $I_{u}(19) \neq \emptyset$. Let $\widetilde{H}_{u}(19) \subset Z$ be the closure of $\pi^{-1}\left(H_{u}(19) \backslash I_{u}(19)\right)$; thus, $\widetilde{H}_{u}(19)=$ $H_{u}(19) \times q$ by (4.3.3). Let $\operatorname{exc}(\pi)$ be the exceptional set of $\pi$; thus, $\pi(\operatorname{exc}(\pi))=I(19)$. Since $\mathscr{F}(19)$ is $\mathbb{Q}$-factorial, $\operatorname{exc}(\pi)$ has pure codimension 1 in $Z$. By Zariski's main theorem, every fiber of $\pi$ is connected; in particular, those over points of $I_{u}(19)$. It follows that there exists one (at least) irreducible component of $\operatorname{exc}(\pi)$ mapping to $I_{u}(19)$ and having non-empty intersection with $\widetilde{H}_{u}(19)$; let $D$ be such a component. Letting $\phi: Z \rightarrow \mathfrak{M}(19)$ be the projection, the image $\phi(D)$ contains $q$ and by hypothesis $\phi(D) \neq\{q\}$. By Theorem 2.4 of [Sha81], $q$ is an isolated point of the indeterminacy locus of $\mathfrak{p}_{19}$; it follows that there exists a subset $\phi(D)^{0} \subset \phi(D)$ which is a codimension- 1 constructible subset of $\mathfrak{M}(19)$, contained in the regular locus of $\mathfrak{p}_{19}$, which is contracted by $\mathfrak{p}_{19}$ (i.e. $\left.\operatorname{dim} \mathfrak{p}_{19}\left(\phi(D)^{0}\right)<18\right)$. This is absurd, e.g. by (2.1.4). This proves (4.3.2). By (4.3.3), it follows that the line bundle $\left(\mathfrak{p}_{19}^{-1}\right)^{*} L(19)$ is trivial on $H_{u}(19)$ and hence

$$
\mu_{3, *}\left(\Gamma_{3}\right) \cdot\left(\lambda(19)+\frac{1}{2} H_{h}(19)+z H_{u}(19)\right)=0 .
$$

By Table 2, we get that $z=1 / 2$.
Remark 4.3.1. Let $\Pi: Z^{*} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(19)^{*}$ be the projection and let $H_{u}(19)^{*} \subset \mathscr{F}(19)^{*}$ be the closure of $H_{u}(19)$. The proof given above that $\pi$ is an isomorphism over $H_{u}(19)$ cannot be adapted to prove that $\Pi$ is an isomorphism over $H_{u}(19)^{*}$ because $\mathscr{F}(19)^{*}$ is not $\mathbb{Q}$-factorial at the boundary. In fact, $\Pi$ is not an isomorphism over $\left(H_{u}(19)^{*} \backslash H_{u}(19)\right)$.

## 5. Predictions for the variation of $\log$ canonical models

The goal of the present section is to predict the behavior of

$$
\mathscr{F}(N, \beta):=\operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}(N), \lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))
$$

for $N \geqslant 3$ and $\beta \in[0,1] \cap \mathbb{Q}$. Specifically, we will give a conjectural decomposition of $\mathfrak{p}_{N}^{-1}$ as a product of flips and, as a last step, the contraction of the strict transform of the support of $\Delta(N)$ (denoted $\Delta^{(1)}(N)$; see $\left.\S 1.7 .3\right)$ : here $\mathfrak{p}_{N}$ is the period map considered in $\S 4.3$ if $N \in\{18,19\}$ and is to be understood as the inverse of the map $\mathscr{F}(N) \rightarrow \operatorname{Proj} R(\mathscr{F}(N), \lambda(N)+\Delta(N))$ otherwise. Each flip will correspond to a critical value $\beta=\beta^{(k)}(N) \in(0,1) \cap \mathbb{Q}$. The center of the flip corresponding to $\beta^{(k)}(N)$ will be (the strict transform of) a building block of the $D$ tower (see $\S 1.7$ ) and it has codimension $k$. (Of course, the value $\beta^{(1)}(N)=1$ corresponds to the contraction of $\Delta^{(1)}(N)$.) In the case of quartic surfaces $(N=19)$, it is possible to match our predicted flip centers with geometric loci in the GIT moduli space $\mathfrak{M}(19)$; this is discussed in the companion note [LO18b]. In the case of hyperelliptic quartics ( $N=18$ ), using VGIT, we can go further and not only match the arithmetic predictions with the geometric ones (essentially the same matching as for quartics), but actually verify that both the arithmetic predictions and the geometric matching are correct. This is discussed in [LO18a].

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

### 5.1 Main conjectures and results

Let $\beta \in(0,1] \cap \mathbb{Q}$. Then the following hold.

- $\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N)$ is a big line bundle with base locus contained in $\Delta^{(1)}(N)$ because $\lambda(N)$ is ample and $\Delta(N)$ is effective.
- If $\beta<1$, the restriction of $\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N)$ to $\Delta^{(1)}(N)$ is big with base locus contained in $\Delta^{(2)}(N)$; see Propositions 5.3.6, 5.3.7, and 5.3.8. In particular, assuming lifting of sections from $\Delta^{(1)}(N)$ to $\mathscr{F}(N)$, the base locus of $\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N)$ is contained in $\Delta^{(2)}(N)$.
- For $N \in\{18,19\}, \mathscr{F}(N)^{*} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}(N, 1) \cong \mathfrak{M}(N)$ is a birational contraction of $\Delta^{(1)}(N)$ by Proposition 4.1.2. This is expected to hold for any $N$ by the arguments of Looijenga.
In order to understand what should be going on, it is convenient to let $\beta \in(0,1] \cap \mathbb{Q}$ decrease, starting from $\beta=1$. For anyone familiar with linearized arrangements, and in fact implicitly contained in Looijenga [Loo03b], $\Delta^{(1)}(N)$ should be contractible regularly away from $\Delta^{(2)}(N)$ (with corresponding $\beta^{(1)}(N)=1$ ), but, in order to contract it regularly, one must first flip $\Delta^{(2)}(N)$, at least away from $\Delta^{(3)}(N)$, with corresponding $0<\beta^{(2)}(N)<1$. The first-order predictions (§5.1.1) are obtained by iterating this procedure, i.e. following Looijenga [Loo03b]. These predictions are based on the combinatorics of the linearized arrangement $\widetilde{\Delta}^{(1)}(N)$ (see $\S 1.7 .3$ ); one essentially computes the log canonical threshold (at the generic point of $\left.\Delta^{(k)}(N)\right)$ as in [Mus06], keeping track of the ramification.
5.1.1 First-order predictions. As we explained, the starting point of Looijenga is the observation that, in the embedding $\mathscr{D}_{N}^{+} \subset \mathscr{D}_{N}^{+} \subset \mathbb{P}^{N+1}$ (we let $\mathscr{D}_{N}^{+}=\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{N}}^{+}$), the automorphic bundle is the restriction of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbb{P}^{N+1}}(-1)$, while a Heegner divisor is a section of $\mathcal{O}_{\mathscr{D}_{N}^{+}}(1)$. This fact suggests that $\lambda(N)+\Delta(N)$ should contract $\Delta^{(1)}(N)$. As always, a linearized arrangement is stratified by linear strata of the intersections, and the first-order predictions (leading to candidates for the critical values $\beta^{(k)}(N)$ ) are a simple function of combinatorics, namely the number of hyperplanes intersecting in a stratum, versus the codimension of that stratum (compare [Mus06]). Of course, in this situation, there is a slight complication due to the fact that these hyperplanes are reflection hyperplanes (note that our $\Delta$ involves a $\frac{1}{2}$ factor for this reason).

Concretely, for most values of $N$ and $k$, we will prove (see Proposition 5.3.6 for a precise statement) that the following formula holds:

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))_{\mid \Delta^{(k)}(N)}=(1-k \beta) \lambda(N)+\frac{1}{2} \beta c_{1}\left(\mathscr{O}_{\Delta^{(k)}(N)}\left(\Delta^{(k+1)}(N)\right)\right) . \tag{5.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We recall (see Proposition 1.7.2) that for most choices of $N$ and $k, \Delta^{(k)}(N)=\operatorname{Im} f_{N-k, N}$, and (5.1.1) should be read as $f_{N-k, N}^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))=(1-k \beta) \lambda(N-k)+\beta \Delta(N-k)$.

If, following Looijenga, we assume that the stratum $\Delta^{(k+1)}(N)$ is flipped before the stratum $\Delta^{(k)}(N)$, we get the prediction

$$
\begin{equation*}
\beta^{(k)}(N)=\frac{1}{k}, \quad k \in\{1, \ldots, N\} . \tag{5.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

In any case, note that $(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))_{\mid \Delta^{(k)}}(N)$ is big for $\beta<1 / k$ by (5.1.1). Thus, assuming a certain lifting of sections (a reasonable assumption, which we can prove in some cases), we get that the generic point of $\Delta^{(k)}(N)$ is not affected by the birational transformations occurring for $\beta \in(0,1 / k)$.

The two key ingredients that give (5.1.1) are the computation of intersections of distinct Heegner divisors (see $\S 5.2$ ) and a normal bundle computation based on adjunction (see §5.3).

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Of course, the actual computations depend on our particular lattices and Heegner divisors, but the method adopted here can be applied in many other instances. (Similar computations are implicitly or explicitly contained in [GHS07] or [Loo03b].)
5.1.2 Refined predictions. The first-order predictions for quartic $K 3$ surfaces are definitely wrong for $k>9$; in fact, the indeterminacy locus of the period map $\mathfrak{p}_{19}$ has dimension 8 , while the first-order predictions would give that it has higher dimension. This apparent contradiction has the following explanation. The key assumption in the first-order predictions is the contractibility of $\Delta^{(k+1)}(N)$ inside $\Delta^{(k)}(N)$, but in the $D$-tower we have the following trichotomy:
(1) $H_{h}(N)$ is birationally contractible in $\mathscr{F}(N)$ for $N>14$;
(2) $H_{h}(N)$ moves in a linear system of dimension at least 1 if $N \leqslant 14$;
(3) $H_{h}(N)$ is ample on $\mathscr{F}(N)$ for $N \leqslant 10$.

Note: (2) and (3) are theorems, while (1) is conjectural in general, but known for $N=18,19$; cf. $\S 4.3$ (probably one can prove it also for $N=20$ via double EPW sextics). The explanation for this comes from Borcherds' relations discussed in § 3 .

Taking into account the behavior of the hyperelliptic divisor described above, we correct our first-order predictions and arrive at the following result.

Prediction 5.1.1. Let $N \geqslant 15$. The ring of sections $R(\mathscr{F}(N), \lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))$ is finitely generated for $\beta \in[0,1] \cap \mathbb{Q}$ and the walls of the Mori chamber decomposition of the cone

$$
\{\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N) \mid \beta \in \mathbb{Q}, \beta>0\}
$$

are generated by $\lambda(N)+(1 / k) \Delta(N)$, where $k \in\{1, \ldots, N-10\}$ and $k \neq N-11$. The behavior of $\lambda(N)+(1 / k) \Delta(N)$, for $k$ as above, is described as follows. For $k=1, \mathscr{F}(N, 1)$ is obtained from $\mathscr{F}(N, 1-\epsilon)$ by contracting the strict transform of $\Delta^{(1)}(N)$. If $2 \leqslant k$, then the birational map between $\mathscr{F}(N, 1 / k-\epsilon)$ and $\mathscr{F}(N, 1 / k+\epsilon)$ is a flip whose center is:
(1) the strict transform of $\operatorname{Im} f_{N-k, N}$ if $2 \leqslant k \leqslant N-14, k \not \equiv N-2(\bmod 8)$, and either $k \neq 4$ or $N \not \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$;
(2) the union of the strict transforms of $\operatorname{Im} f_{N-4, N}$ and $\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{N-1, N} \circ l_{N-1}\right)$ if $k=4$ and $N \equiv 4$ $(\bmod 8) ;$
(3) the union of the strict transforms of $\operatorname{Im} f_{N-k, N}$ and $\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{N-(k-1), N} \circ l_{N-(k-1)}\right)$ if $3 \leqslant k \leqslant$ $N-10$ and $k \equiv N-2(\bmod 8)($ notice that this includes the case $k=N-10) ;$
(4) the strict transform of $\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{13, N} \circ q_{13}\right)$ if $k=(N-13)$;
(5) the strict transform of $\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{12, N} \circ m_{12}\right)$ if $k=(N-12)$.

Remark 5.1.2 (Early termination). The predictions in Prediction 5.1.1 differ from the first-order predictions for $k>N-14$. In fact, the generic point of $\Delta^{(k)}(N)$ is unaffected by the birational transformations for $\beta<1 /(N-14)$. More precisely, $f_{13, N}\left(\mathscr{F}(13) \backslash H_{u}(13)\right)$ (which is contained in $\Delta^{(N-13)}(N)$ ) will be flipped when $\beta=1 /(N-14)$ (at once with $\left.\Delta^{(N-14)}\right)$. Moreover, $\Delta^{(N-10)}(N)$ consists of two disjoint components $f_{10, N}(\mathscr{F}(10))$ and $f_{11, N}\left(H_{u}(11)\right)$ (see Proposition 1.7.2). The first component will be flipped at $\beta=1 /(N-14)$, while the second is the center of the flip for $\beta=1 /(N-10)$ (the smallest critical value).

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

### 5.2 Intersection of two distinct Heegner divisors

We proved (see Propositions 1.4.5, 1.5.1, and 1.5.2) that for $4 \leqslant N$ there are isomorphisms

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{N}: \mathscr{F}(N-1) \xrightarrow{\sim} H_{h}(N) . \tag{5.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We also proved that, for $k \geqslant 0$, there are isomorphisms

$$
\begin{equation*}
l_{8 k+3}: \mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right) \xrightarrow{\sim} H_{u}(8 k+3) \tag{5.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{8 k+4}: \mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right) \xrightarrow{\sim} H_{u}(8 k+4) . \tag{5.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The key ingredient in the heuristics for our predictions is the computation of the restrictions of the line bundle $\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N)$ to the various strata $\Delta^{(k)}(N)$. Via pull-back by $f_{N}$ (and $l_{N}, m_{N}$, or $q_{N}$ if applicable), this restriction is computed in an inductive manner. The result below is our starting point.
Proposition 5.2.1. With notation as above, the following formulae hold:

$$
\begin{align*}
f_{N}^{*} H_{n}(N) & = \begin{cases}H_{n}(N-1)+2 H_{h}(N-1) \\
H_{n}(N-1)+2 H_{h}(N-1)+H_{u}(N-1) & \text { if } N \not \equiv 5 \\
\text { if } N \equiv 5 & (\bmod 8), \\
(\bmod 8),\end{cases} \\
f_{N}^{*} H_{u}(N) & = \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } N \equiv 2 \quad(\bmod 8), \\
2 H_{u}(N-1) & \text { if } N \not \equiv 2 \quad(\bmod 8),\end{cases}  \tag{5.2.4}\\
l_{8 k+3}^{*} H_{n}(8 k+3) & =H_{n}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}\right),  \tag{5.2.6}\\
l_{8 k+3}^{*} H_{h}(8 k+3) & =0,  \tag{5.2.7}\\
m_{8 k+4}^{*} H_{n}(8 k+4) & =H_{n}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right),  \tag{5.2.8}\\
m_{8 k+4}^{*} H_{h}(8 k+4) & =2 H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right),  \tag{5.2.9}\\
q_{8 k+5}^{*} H_{n}(8 k+5) & =H_{n}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)+2 H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right),  \tag{5.2.10}\\
q_{8 k+5}^{*} H_{h}(8 k+5) & =2 H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right) . \tag{5.2.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Remark 5.2.2. Let $N \equiv 3(\bmod 8)$. Then (5.2.5) reads $f_{N}^{*} H_{u}(N)=0$ because $H_{u}(N-1)=0$; see Item (3) of Definition 1.3.4.
5.2.1 Set-up. Let $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ be our standard decorated dimension- $N D$-lattice. Let $v \in \Lambda_{N}$ and suppose that one of the following holds.
(1) $v$ is a hyperelliptic vector; thus, $v^{\perp} \cong \Lambda_{N-1}$ and it comes with a decoration $\xi_{N-1}$; see $\S 1.4$.
(2) $N=8 k+3$ and $v$ is unigonal; thus, $v^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}$; see $\S$ 1.5.1.
(3) $N=8 k+4$ and $v$ is unigonal; thus, $v^{\perp} \cong ~ \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}$; see $\S$ 1.5.2.

Let $\Gamma_{v}<\Gamma_{\xi_{N}}$ be the stabilizer of $v$. Thus,

$$
\Gamma_{v}= \begin{cases}\Gamma_{\xi_{N-1}} & \text { if }(1) \text { holds } \\ O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right) & \text { if (2) holds, } \\ O^{+}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right) & \text { if (3) holds }\end{cases}
$$

Then we have a natural isomorphism

$$
\varphi_{v}: \Gamma_{v} \backslash \mathscr{D}_{v^{\perp}}^{+} \xrightarrow{\sim} H_{v}(N),
$$

where $H_{v}(N):=H_{v, \Lambda_{N}}\left(\Gamma_{\xi_{N}}\right)$. In fact, if Item (1) holds then $\varphi_{v}=f_{N}$, if Item (2) holds then $\varphi_{v}=l_{N}$, and if Item (3) holds then $\varphi_{v}=m_{N}$.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Definition 5.2.3. Let $v \in \Lambda_{N}$ be as above, i.e. we assume that one of Items (1), (2), or (3) holds. Given $w \in \Lambda_{N}$ such that $\langle v, w\rangle$ is a rank-2 subgroup of $\Lambda_{N}$, we let $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)$ be a generator of the intersection $(\mathbb{Q} v \oplus \mathbb{Q} w) \cap v_{\mathbb{Z}}^{\perp}$ (thus, $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)$ is non-zero and determined up to $\pm 1$ ).

Proposition 5.2.4. Let $v \in \Lambda_{N}$ be as above, i.e. we assume that one of Items (1), (2), or (3) holds. Assume that $w_{0} \in \Lambda_{N}$ is a primitive vector of negative square such that the associated Heegner divisor $H_{w_{0}}(N)=H_{w_{0}, \Lambda_{N}}\left(\Gamma_{\xi_{N}}\right)$ is different from $H_{v}(N)$. The following set-theoretic equality holds:

$$
\varphi_{v}^{-1} H_{w_{0}}(N)=\bigcup_{\langle v, w\rangle<0} H_{\pi_{v} \perp(w), v^{\perp}}\left(\Gamma_{v}\right),
$$

where $\langle v, w\rangle<0$ means that $\langle v, w\rangle$ is a negative-definite sublattice of $\Lambda_{N}$. (And hence $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)$ is a vector of negative square.)

Proof. There is a single observation to be made, namely that if $[\sigma] \in v^{\perp} \cap w^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{N}}^{+}$, then $\langle v, w\rangle$ is a negative-definite sublattice of $\Lambda_{N}$.

### 5.2.2 Intersection with the hyperelliptic Heegner divisor.

Proposition 5.2.5.

$$
f_{N}^{-1} H_{n}(N)= \begin{cases}H_{n}(N-1) \cup H_{h}(N-1) & \text { if } N \not \equiv 5(\bmod 8)  \tag{5.2.12}\\ H_{n}(N-1) \cup H_{h}(N-1) \cup H_{u}(N-1) & \text { if } N \equiv 5(\bmod 8)\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
f_{N}^{-1} H_{u}(N)= \begin{cases}\emptyset & \text { if } N \equiv 2 \quad(\bmod 8)  \tag{5.2.13}\\ H_{u}(N-1) & \text { if } N \not \equiv 2 \quad(\bmod 8)\end{cases}
$$

Proof. We adopt the notation introduced in $\S 5.2 .1$; in particular, $v \in \Lambda$ is a fixed hyperelliptic vector. Let us prove that the right-hand side of (5.2.12) is contained in the left-hand side.

Let $w \in v^{\perp}$ be of square -2 and divisibility 1 (as vector of $v^{\perp}$ ). Then $w$ is a nodal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ and $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)=w$; thus, $H_{n}(N-1) \subset f_{N}^{-1} H_{n}(N)$ by Proposition 5.2.4.

Let us prove that $H_{h}(N-1) \subset f_{N}^{-1} H_{n}(N)$. Let $u$ be a hyperelliptic vector of $\left(v^{\perp}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$. Let $w:=(v+u) / 2$; then $w \in \Lambda_{N}$ : see the definition of the decoration of $v^{\perp}$ in $\S 1.4$. We claim that $w$ is a nodal vector. In fact, $w^{2}=-2$ and $\operatorname{div}(w)=1$ because there exists $z \in v^{\perp}$ such that $(u, z)=2$ (because $\operatorname{div}_{v^{\perp}}(u)=2$ ) and hence $(w, z)=1$. Since $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)=u$, it follows that $H_{h}(N-1) \subset f_{N}^{-1} H_{n}(N)$ by Proposition 5.2.4.

Now assume that $N=8 k+5$. Then $H_{u}(N-1) \subset f_{N}^{-1} H_{n}(N)$ by Item (4) of Proposition 1.4.6.
Next, let us prove that the left-hand side of (5.2.12) is contained in the right-hand side. By Proposition 5.2.4, it suffices to prove that, if $w$ is a nodal vector of $\left(\Lambda, \xi_{N}\right)$ such that $\langle v, w\rangle$ is negative definite, then $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)$ is either a nodal or a hyperelliptic vector, or $N \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$ and $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)$ is a unigonal vector. Computing the determinant of the restriction of the quadratic form to $\langle v, w\rangle$ (which is strictly positive), we conclude that $(v, w) \in\{0, \pm 2\}$; multiplying $w$ by $(-1)$ if necessary, we may assume that $(v, w) \in\{0,2\}$.

If $(v, w)=0$, then $\operatorname{div}_{v^{\perp}}(w) \in\{1,2\}$. If $\operatorname{div}_{v^{\perp}}(w)=1$, then $w$ is a nodal class of $v^{\perp}$. If $\operatorname{div}_{v^{\perp}}(w)=2$, then $w$ is a unigonal class of $v^{\perp}$ and then necessarily $N \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$ because the discriminant group $A_{v^{\perp}}=A_{\Lambda_{N-1}}$ contains the class $[w / 2]$ of square $-1 / 2$ modulo $2 \mathbb{Z}$.

If $(v, w)=2$, let $u:=v+2 w$. Then $\pi_{v \perp}(w)=u$. We claim that $u$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $\left(v^{\perp}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$. First, $u^{2}=-4$. It remains to check that $\operatorname{div}_{v^{\perp}}(u)=2$ and $u^{*}$ is equal to the decoration

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

that $v^{\perp}$ inherits from the decoration $\xi_{N}$ of $\Lambda_{N}$. Clearly, $\operatorname{div}_{v^{\perp}}(u)$ is a multiple of 2 and hence we must show that $\operatorname{div}_{v^{\perp}}(u) \neq 4$. If $\operatorname{div}_{v^{\perp}}(u)=4$, then $N=8 k+4$ and hence $\Lambda_{N} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}^{2}$; let $a, b$ be generators of the two $A_{1}$-summands. We may assume that $v=a+b$ because any two decorated dimension- $N D$-lattices are isomorphic. Then there exist $r, m \in \mathbb{Z}$, and a primitive $c \in \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}$, such that

$$
w=r a-(1+r) b+(2 m+1) c .
$$

In fact, write $w=r a+s b+t c$, where $r, s, t \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $c \in \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}$ is primitive. Then $s=-(1+r)$, because $(v, w)=2$, and $t$ is odd because the divisibility of $w$ in $\Lambda_{N}$ is 1 . Thus, $u=(1+2 x)$ $(a-b)+2(2 m+1) c$ and, since $\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}$ is unimodular, it follows that $\operatorname{div}_{v^{\perp}}(u) \neq 4$. In order to prove that $u^{*}$ is the decoration of $v^{\perp}$, we recall that the latter is equal to $[z / 2]$, where $z \in v^{\perp}$ is such that $(v+z) / 2 \in \Lambda$; see $\S 1.4$ (we have denoted by $z$ the vector denoted $w$ in $\S 1.4$ ). Since $u=v+2 w$, it follows that $[u / 2]=-[z / 2]=[z / 2]$ in the discriminant group $A_{v^{\perp}}$. This proves that $\pi_{v \perp}(w)$ is hyperelliptic and finishes the proof of (5.2.12).

Now let us prove (5.2.13). Let $N-2=8 k+a$. If $a=0$, then $H_{u}(N)=0$ and hence (5.2.13) holds trivially. Thus, we may assume that $a \in\{1, \ldots, 7\}$. First, we will prove that the right-hand side is contained in the left-hand side. We may assume that $a \in\{2, \ldots, 7\}$ because if $a=1$, then $H_{h}(N-1)=0$. By Remark 1.1.4, we may identify $\Lambda_{N}$ with $\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{a}$. Let $v=\left(0_{4+8 k}\right.$, $(0, \ldots, 0,2))$; then $v^{2}=-4$ and $\operatorname{div}(v)=2$. We let $\xi_{N}=[v / 2]$ and hence $v$ is hyperelliptic. Now suppose that $N$ is odd. Let $w=\left(0_{4+8 k},(2, \ldots, 2)\right)$; then $w$ is a unigonal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$; see the proof of Proposition 1.3.3. Then $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)=\left(0_{4+8 k},(1, \ldots, 1)\right) \in \mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus D_{a-1}$. Since $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)$ is a unigonal vector of ( $\left.\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$ (see the proof of Proposition 1.3.3), it follows that $f_{N}^{-1} H_{u}(N) \supset H_{u}(N-1)$ if $N$ is odd. The proof for $N$ even is analogous.

Lastly, we prove that the left-hand side of (5.2.13) is contained in the right-hand side. By Proposition 5.2.4, it suffices to prove that, if $w$ is a unigonal vector of $\left(\Lambda, \xi_{N}\right)$ such that $\langle v, w\rangle$ is negative definite, then $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)$ is a unigonal vector. Let $a \in\{1, \ldots, 7\}$ be the residue of $N-2$ modulo 8 . Let us assume that $N$ is odd. Then $w^{2}=-4 a$ and $\operatorname{div}(w)=4$. We claim that

$$
\begin{equation*}
(v, w)= \pm 4, \quad(v+w) / 2 \in \Lambda \tag{5.2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

In fact, we may assume that $w^{*}=\zeta$ and $\xi=2 \zeta$. Thus,

$$
(v / 2, w / 4) \equiv(\xi, \zeta) \equiv 2 q_{\Lambda}(\zeta) \equiv-a / 2 \quad(\bmod \mathbb{Z})
$$

and hence there exists $s \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $(v, w)=-4 a+8 s$. Since $\langle v, w\rangle$ is negative definite, it follows that $a \in\{3,7\}$ (recall that $H_{h}(N-1)=0$ if $a=1$ ) and that $(v, w)= \pm 4$. Moreover, $(v+w) / 2 \in \Lambda$ because $2[w / 4]=[v / 2]$ in the discriminant group. We have proved (5.2.14). Multiplying $w$ by $(-1)$ if necessary, we may assume that $(v, w)=4$; it follows that $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)=$ $(v+w) / 2$. Now $(v+w) / 2$ is a unigonal vector of $v^{\perp}$, as required. Now assume that $N$ is even. Arguing as above, one shows that $(v, w)= \pm 2$ and hence we may assume that $(v, w)=2$. Then $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)=v+2 w$. Since $v+2 w$ is primitive, $\operatorname{div}_{v^{\perp}}(v+2 w)=4$, and $(v+2 w)^{2}=-4(a-1)$, this proves that $\pi_{v^{\perp}}(w)$ is a unigonal vector of $v^{\perp}$.

Let us prove (5.2.4) and (5.2.5). First, notice that $H_{n}(N-1), H_{h}(N-1)$, and $H_{u}(N-1)$ are irreducible. By Proposition 5.2.5, it remains to show that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \operatorname{mult}_{f_{N}\left(H_{n}(N-1)\right)} H_{n}(N) \cdot H_{h}(N)=1,  \tag{5.2.15}\\
& \operatorname{mult}_{f_{N}\left(H_{h}(N-1)\right)} H_{n}(N) \cdot H_{h}(N)=2,  \tag{5.2.16}\\
& \operatorname{mult}_{f_{N}\left(H_{u}(N-1)\right)} H_{n}(N) \cdot H_{h}(N)=1 \quad \text { if } N \equiv 5 \quad(\bmod 8),  \tag{5.2.17}\\
& \operatorname{mult}_{f_{N}\left(H_{u}(N-1)\right)} H_{u}(N) \cdot H_{h}(N)=2 \quad \text { if } N \equiv b \quad(\bmod 8) \text { and } 4 \leqslant b \leqslant 9 . \tag{5.2.18}
\end{align*}
$$

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ Surfaces

In order to prove the above equalities, we fix a hyperelliptic vector $v$ of $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ and we let $w \in v^{\perp} \cong \Lambda_{N-1}$ be a vector such that one of the following holds:
(1) $w$ is a nodal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$;
(2) $w$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$;
(3) $w$ is a unigonal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$.

Let $[\sigma] \in\{v, w\}^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{N}}^{+}$. Then $[\sigma] \in f_{N}\left(H_{n}(N-1)\right)$ if (1) holds, $[\sigma] \in f_{N}\left(H_{h}(N-1)\right)$ if (2) holds, and $[\sigma] \in f_{N}\left(H_{u}(N-1)\right)$ if (3) holds. Since each of $H_{n}(N-1), H_{h}(N-1)$, and $H_{u}(N-1)$ is irreducible, we may prove formulae (5.2.15)-(5.2.18) by analyzing the local structure of $\mathscr{F}(N)$, $H_{h}(N)$ etc. at the $\Gamma_{\xi_{N}}$-orbit of $[\sigma]$. We claim that the following hold.
$\left(1^{\prime}\right)$ If $w$ is a nodal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$, then

$$
\Lambda_{N} \cap\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Q}}=\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}}:=\mathbb{Z} v+\mathbb{Z} w
$$

and every non-trivial isometry of $\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}}$ is either the reflection in a reflective vector of $\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}}$ or multiplication by -1 .
(2') If $w$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$, then

$$
\Lambda_{N} \cap\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Q}}=\langle(v+w) / 2,(v-w) / 2\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}} \cong D_{2}
$$

and every non-trivial isometry of $\langle(v+w) / 2,(v-w) / 2\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}}$ is either the reflection in a reflective vector of $\langle(v+w) / 2,(v-w) / 2\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}}$ or multiplication by -1 .
$\left(3 a^{\prime}\right)$ If $w$ is a unigonal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$ and $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$, then $\Lambda_{N} \cap\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Q}}=$ $\langle(v+w) / 2,(v-w) / 2\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}} \cong D_{2}$ and every non-trivial isometry of $\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}}$ is either the reflection in a reflective vector of $\langle(v+w) / 2,(v-w) / 2\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}}$ or multiplication by -1 .
$\left(3 \mathrm{~b}^{\prime}\right)$ If $w$ is a unigonal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$ and $N \not \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$, then $\Lambda_{N} \cap\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Q}}=\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}}$ and every non-trivial isometry of $\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}}$ is either the reflection in a reflective vector of $\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Z}}$ or multiplication by -1 .

In fact, in order to determine $\Lambda_{N} \cap\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Q}}$, it suffices to recall that $\Lambda_{N}$ is generated (over $\mathbb{Z})$ by $\mathbb{Z} v \oplus v^{\perp}$, together with $(v+u) / 2$, where $u \in v^{\perp}=\Lambda_{N-1}$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$. Once $\Lambda_{N} \cap\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Q}}$ has been determined, the statements about non-trivial isometries are trivial. Now let $[\sigma]$ be a very general point of $\{v, w\}^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{N}}^{+}$. Then

$$
\sigma^{\perp} \cap \Lambda_{N, \mathbb{Q}}=\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Q}}
$$

and $-1_{\{v, w\}^{\perp}}$ is the only non-trivial element of $O\left(\Lambda_{N} \cap\{v, w\}_{\mathbb{Q}}^{\perp}\right)$ stabilizing [ $\sigma$ ]. It follows that there is a natural embedding

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{\sigma}: \operatorname{Stab}([\sigma]) \hookrightarrow O\left(\Lambda_{N} \cap\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{Q}}\right) \times\left\langle-1_{\{v, w\}^{\perp}}\right\rangle . \tag{5.2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

(Here $\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma])<\Gamma_{\xi_{N}}$ is the stabilizer of $[\sigma]$.)
CLAim 5.2.6. Let $[\sigma]$ be a very general point of $\{v, w\}^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{N}}^{+}$; hence, there is the natural embedding (5.2.19).
(I) If $w$ is a reflective vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$, i.e. Item (1) or Item (2) above holds, or $N \equiv 4,5$ $(\bmod 8)$ and Item (3) holds, then $T_{\sigma}$ is surjective.

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

(II) If $w$ is not a reflective vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$, i.e. $N \not \equiv 4,5(\bmod 8)$ and Item (3) holds, then $\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma])=\left\{ \pm \rho_{v}\right\}$.

Let $w \in v^{\perp}$ be a vector such that (1), (2), or (3) above holds. Then Claim 5.2.6 allows us to describe explicitly a neighborhood in $\mathscr{F}(N)$ of the $\Gamma_{\xi}$-orbit of a very general point $[\sigma] \in\{v, w\}^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{N}}^{+}$. First of all, since $-1_{\Lambda_{N}}$ acts trivially, we must deal only with the action of $\operatorname{Stab}^{0}([\sigma]):=\operatorname{Stab}([\sigma]) /\left\langle-1_{\Lambda_{N}}\right\rangle$ and, secondly, by Claim 5.2.6, the germ of $\Gamma_{\xi}[\sigma]$ in $\mathscr{F}(N)$ is naturally isomorphic to the product of the smooth germ $\left(\{v, w\}^{\perp} \cap \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{N}}^{+},[\sigma]\right)$ and the germ of $\operatorname{Stab}^{0}([\sigma]) \backslash\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{C}}$ at the origin. Let $\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ be coordinates on the vector space $\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{C}}$ corresponding to the basis $\{v, w\}$. Thus,

$$
\rho_{v}^{*}\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)=\left(-x_{1}, x_{2}\right) .
$$

We claim that the following hold.
$\left(1^{\prime \prime}\right)$ If $w$ is a nodal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$, then $\operatorname{Stab}^{0}([\sigma]) \backslash\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{C}} \cong \mathbb{C}^{2}$ with coordinates $\left(y_{1}, y_{2}\right)$ given by $y_{1}=x_{1}^{2}, y_{2}=x_{2}^{2}$.
$\left(2^{\prime \prime}\right)$ If $w$ is a hyperelliptic vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$, then $\operatorname{Stab}^{0}([\sigma]) \backslash\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{C}} \cong \mathbb{C}^{2}$ with coordinates $\left(y_{1}, y_{2}\right)$ given by $y_{1}=x_{1}^{2}+x_{2}^{2}, y_{2}=x_{1}^{2} x_{2}^{2}$.
( $3^{\prime \prime}$ a) If $w$ is a unigonal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$, and $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$, then $\operatorname{Stab}^{0}([\sigma]) \backslash\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{C}} \cong \mathbb{C}^{2}$ with coordinates $\left(y_{1}, y_{2}\right)$ given by $y_{1}=x_{1}^{2}+x_{2}^{2}, y_{2}=x_{1}^{2} x_{2}^{2}$.
$\left(3^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{ba}\right)$ If $w$ is a unigonal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$, and $N \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$, then $\operatorname{Stab}^{0}([\sigma]) \backslash\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{C}} \cong \mathbb{C}^{2}$ with coordinates $\left(y_{1}, y_{2}\right)$ given by $y_{1}=x_{1}^{2}, y_{2}=x_{2}^{2}$.
$\left(3^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{bb}\right)$ If $w$ is a unigonal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N-1}, \xi_{N-1}\right)$, and $N \not \equiv 4,5(\bmod 8)$, then $\operatorname{Stab}^{0}([\sigma]) \backslash\langle v, w\rangle_{\mathbb{C}} \cong \mathbb{C}^{2}$ with coordinates $\left(y_{1}, y_{2}\right)$ given by $y_{1}=x_{1}^{2}, y_{2}=x_{2}$.
In fact, the above statements follow from ( $\left.1^{\prime}\right),\left(2^{\prime}\right),\left(3^{\prime}\right)$, Claim 5.2.6, and Items (3) and (4) of Proposition 1.4.6. Now we are ready to prove the multiplicity formulae (5.2.15), (5.2.16), (5.2.17), and (5.2.18). Suppose that Item (1) holds. Since the relevant nodal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ is $w$ itself, Item ( $1^{\prime \prime}$ ) shows that the left-hand side of $(5.2 .15)$ is equal to the intersection number at $(0,0)$ of the coordinate axes of the plane $\mathbb{C}^{2}$ (with coordinates $\left(y_{1}, y_{2}\right)$ ) and hence 1 . Now suppose that Item (2) holds. Since the relevant nodal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ is $(v \pm w) / 2$, Item ( $2^{\prime \prime}$ ) shows that the left-hand side of (5.2.16) is equal to the intersection number at $(0,0)$ of $V\left(y_{1}^{2}-4 y_{2}\right), V\left(y_{2}\right) \subset \mathbb{C}^{2}$ and hence 2 . Next, suppose that Item (3) holds and that $N \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$. Since the relevant nodal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ is $w$ itself, Item ( $3^{\prime \prime}$ ba) shows that the left-hand side of (5.2.17) is equal to 1 . Lastly, suppose that Item (3) holds and that $N \not \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$. The relevant unigonal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ is $(v \pm w) / 2$ if $N$ is odd, and $(v \pm 2 w)$ if $N$ is even (see the proof of Proposition 5.2.5); it follows by Items ( $3^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{a}$ ) and ( $3^{\prime \prime} \mathrm{bb}$ ) that the left-hand side of (5.2.18) is equal to 1 .
5.2.3 Intersections with the unigonal Heegner divisor. We will prove (5.2.6) and (5.2.7). Thus, we assume that $N \equiv 3(\bmod 8)$ and write $N=8 k+3$. First, let us prove the set-theoretic equalities

$$
\begin{equation*}
l_{N}^{-1} H_{n}(N)=H_{n}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}\right), \quad l_{N}^{-1} H_{h}(N)=\emptyset . \tag{5.2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $v$ be a unigonal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$. Thus, $v^{2}=-4, \operatorname{div}(v)=4$, and $v^{\perp} \cong \mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}$.
Let $w \in v^{\perp}$ be a nodal vector, i.e. $v^{2}=-2$. Then $w$ is a nodal vector of $\left(\Lambda_{N}, \xi_{N}\right)$ and hence $l_{N}^{-1} H_{n}(N) \supset H_{n}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)$ by Proposition 5.2.4. On the other hand, suppose that $w \in \Lambda_{N}$ is a nodal vector such that $\langle v, w\rangle$ is negative definite; then $w \perp v$ because the determinant of the restriction of $($,$) to \langle v, w\rangle$ is positive and hence $w$ is a nodal vector of $v^{\perp}$. By Proposition 5.2.4,

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

this proves the reverse inclusion, i.e. $l_{N}^{-1} H_{n}(N) \subset H_{n}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)$. This finishes the proof of the first equality of (5.2.20).

The second equality of (5.2.20) follows from (5.2.13) because $H_{u}(2)=0$. It remains to prove that mult $l_{l_{N}\left(H_{n}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)\right)} H_{u}(N) \cdot H_{n}(N)=1$. The proof is analogous to the proof of (5.2.15); we leave details to the reader.

The cases of unigonal divisors for $N \equiv 4,5(\bmod 8)$ (i.e. formulae (5.2.8), (5.2.9), (5.2.10), and (5.2.11)) are similar; we omit the details. (We refer the reader to $\S \S 1.5 .2$ and 1.6 for some arithmetic details specific to these cases.)

### 5.3 Normal bundle formulae

In the present subsection, we will prove the following result.
Proposition 5.3.1. Let $4 \leqslant N$ and let $f_{N}: \mathscr{F}(N-1) \xrightarrow{\sim} H_{u}(N)$ be the isomorphism of Proposition 1.4.5. Then the following equalities hold:

$$
f_{N}^{*} H_{h}(N)=-2 \lambda(N-1)+H_{h}(N-1)+ \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } N \not \equiv 4(\bmod 8)  \tag{5.3.1}\\ H_{u}(N-1) & \text { if } N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)\end{cases}
$$

Similarly, let $l_{8 k+3}: \mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right) \xrightarrow{\sim} H_{u}(8 k+3), m_{8 k+4}: \mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right) \xrightarrow{\sim} H_{h}(8 k+4)$, and $q_{8 k+5}: \mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right) \xrightarrow{\sim} H_{h}(8 k+5)$ be the isomorphisms in (1.7.4), (1.7.5), and (1.7.7). Then

$$
\begin{align*}
l_{8 k+3}^{*} H_{u}(8 k+3) & =-2 \lambda\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}\right),  \tag{5.3.2}\\
m_{8 k+4}^{*} H_{u}(8 k+4) & =-2 \lambda\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)+H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right),  \tag{5.3.3}\\
q_{8 k+5}^{*} H_{u}(8 k+5) & =-\lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)+\frac{3}{2} H_{u}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right) . \tag{5.3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

5.3.1 Adjunction. Let $\mathscr{F}=\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)$ be a locally symmetric variety of Type IV, with notation as in $\S 1.2$. We let $N:=\operatorname{dim} \mathscr{F}$. Since $\mathscr{F}$ has quotient singularities, the canonical bundle of $\mathscr{F}$ is a well-defined element $K_{\mathscr{F}} \in \operatorname{Pic}\left(\mathscr{F}_{\Lambda}(\Gamma)\right)_{\mathbb{Q}}$. Let $\lambda_{\mathscr{F}}$ be the automorphic $\mathbb{Q}$-line bundle on $\mathscr{F}$. Thus, sections of $\lambda_{\mathscr{F}}^{\otimes d}$ are identified with weight- $d$ automorphic forms on $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$and, letting $\pi: \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}$ be the quotient map, $\pi^{*} \lambda_{\mathscr{F}} \cong \mathscr{O}_{\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}}(-1)$.

If $\Gamma$ acts freely on $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$(and hence $\mathscr{F}$ is smooth), then

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{\mathscr{F}}=N \lambda_{\mathscr{F}} . \tag{5.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

In fact, the above formula follows by descent from the analogous formula $K_{\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}}=N \mathscr{O}_{\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}}(-1)$ (adjunction formula for a smooth quadric in $\mathbb{P}^{N+1}$ ). In general, there will be a correction term coming from the ramification of the map $\pi: \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}$.

Definition 5.3.2. Let $B(\mathscr{F})$ be the divisor on $\mathscr{F}$ which is the sum of all Heegner divisors $H_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma)$, where $v \in \Lambda$ is primitive, $v^{2}<0, \pm \rho_{v} \in \Gamma$, where only one hyperplane appears for each couple $\{v,-v\}$.

Proposition 5.3.3. Keep notation as above. Then, in $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{F})_{\mathbb{Q}}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{\mathscr{F}}=N \lambda_{\mathscr{F}}-\frac{1}{2} B(\mathscr{F}) . \tag{5.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Proof. The ramification divisor of the quotient map $\pi: \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}$ is the sum of the pre-Heegner divisors $\mathscr{H}_{v, \Lambda}(\Gamma)$, where $v \in \Lambda$ is primitive, $v^{2}<0, \pm \rho_{v} \in \Gamma$, where only one hyperplane appears for each couple $\{v,-v\}$. In fact, this is [GHS07, Corollary 2.13]. Now let $\Gamma_{0} \triangleleft \Gamma$ be a finite-index normal subgroup acting freely on $\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$, let $\mathscr{F}_{0}:=\Gamma_{0} \backslash \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+}$, and let $\pi_{0}: \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}_{0}$ be the quotient map. The ramification divisor of the finite Galois cover $\mathscr{F}_{0} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}$ is identified with the image by $\pi_{0}: \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}_{0}$ of the ramification divisor of $\pi: \mathscr{D}_{\Lambda}^{+} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}$. Equation (5.3.5) and Riemann-Hurwitz applied to $\mathscr{F}_{0} \rightarrow \mathscr{F}$ give the proposition.

As before, let $B(N)$ be the Weil divisor on $\mathscr{F}(N)$ defined by

$$
B(N)=H_{n}(N)+2 \Delta(N)= \begin{cases}H_{n}(N)+H_{h}(N) & \text { if } N \not \equiv 3,4 \quad(\bmod 8)  \tag{5.3.7}\\ H_{n}(N)+H_{h}(N)+H_{u}(N) & \text { if } N \equiv 3,4 \quad(\bmod 8)\end{cases}
$$

By Proposition 1.3.5, we see that $B(N)$ is the branch divisor for $\mathscr{F}(N)$ (i.e. $B(N)=B(\mathscr{F}(\Lambda, \xi))$ for $(\Lambda, \xi)$ a dimension- $N$ decorated $D$-lattice). Thus, we have the following result.

Corollary 5.3.4. Keeping notation as above,

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{\mathscr{F}(N)}=N \lambda(N)-\frac{1}{2} B(N) . \tag{5.3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right):=\lambda_{\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)}, \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right):=\lambda_{\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)}$, and $\lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right):=$ $\lambda_{\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)}$. The proof of the result below is omitted because it is analogous to the proof of Corollary 5.3.4.

Corollary 5.3.5. Keep notation as above. The following equalities hold in $\operatorname{Pic}\left(\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)\right)_{\mathbb{Q}}$, $\operatorname{Pic}\left(\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)\right)_{\mathbb{Q}}$, and $\operatorname{Pic}\left(\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)\right)_{\mathbb{Q}}$, respectively:

$$
\begin{aligned}
K_{\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)} & =(8 k+2) \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)-\frac{1}{2} H_{n}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right), \\
K_{\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)} & =(8 k+3) \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)-\frac{1}{2} H_{n}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right)-\frac{1}{2} H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{1}\right), \\
K_{\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)} & =(8 k+4) \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2} H_{n}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2} H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k} \oplus A_{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

5.3.2 Normal bundle formula for the hyperelliptic divisor.

Proof of (5.3.1). By Proposition 1.4.5, the intersection $H_{h}(N) \cap \operatorname{sing} \mathscr{F}(N)$ has codimension at least 2 in $H_{h}(N)$ and hence we may apply adjunction to compute the canonical class of $H_{h}(N)$. Since $f_{N}: \mathscr{F}(N-1) \rightarrow H_{h}(N)$ is an isomorphism, Corollary 5.3.4 gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
K_{\mathscr{F}(N-1)} & =f_{N}^{*}\left(K_{\mathscr{F}(N)}+H_{h}(N)\right) \\
& =f_{N}^{*}\left(N \lambda(N)-\frac{1}{2}\left(B(N)-H_{h}(N)\right)+\frac{1}{2} H_{h}(N)\right) \\
& =N \lambda(N-1)-\frac{1}{2} f_{N}^{*}\left(B(N)-H_{h}(N)\right)+\frac{1}{2} f_{N}^{*} H_{h}(N) .
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand, the canonical class of $\mathscr{F}(N-1)$ is given by (5.3.8); equating the two expressions for $K_{\mathscr{F}(N-1)}$, one gets

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{N}^{*} H_{h}(N)=-2 \lambda(N-1)+f_{N}^{*}\left(B(N)-H_{h}(N)\right)-B(N-1) . \tag{5.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (5.2.4) and (5.2.5),

$$
f_{N}^{*}\left(B(N)-H_{h}(N)\right)-B(N-1)=H_{h}(N-1)+\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
0 & \text { if } N \not \equiv 4 & (\bmod 8) \\
H_{u}(N-1) & \text { if } N \equiv 4 & (\bmod 8)
\end{array}\right.
$$

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

### 5.3.3 Normal bundle formula for the unigonal divisor.

Proof of (5.3.2). We let $N=8 k+3$. By Proposition 1.5.1, the intersection $H_{u}(N) \cap \operatorname{sing} \mathscr{F}(N)$ has codimension at least 2 in $H_{u}(N)$ and hence we may apply adjunction to compute the canonical class of $H_{u}(N)$. Since $l_{N}: \mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}\right) \rightarrow H_{u}(N)$ is an isomorphism, Corollary 5.3.4 gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
K_{\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)} & =l_{N}^{*}\left(K_{\mathscr{F}(N)}+H_{u}(N)\right) \\
& =l_{N}^{*}\left(N \lambda(N)-\frac{1}{2}\left(B(N)-H_{u}(N)\right)+\frac{1}{2} H_{u}(N)\right) \\
& =N \lambda\left(\mathrm{I}_{2,2+8 k}\right)-\frac{1}{2} l_{N}^{*}\left(B(N)-H_{u}(N)\right)+\frac{1}{2} l_{N}^{*} H_{u}(N) .
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand, $K_{\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)}=(2+8 k) \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)-\frac{1}{2} H_{n}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)$ by Corollary 5.3.5. Comparing the two expressions for $K_{\mathscr{F}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2,2+8 k}\right)}$, and invoking (5.2.6) and (5.2.7), one gets (5.3.2).

The computations of the normal bundle formulae for the unigonal divisor when $N \equiv 4,5$ $(\bmod 8)$ are similar; we omit the details.
5.3.4 Pull-back of $(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))$. Equations (5.3.1) and (5.2.5) give the following formula:

$$
f_{N}^{*} \Delta(N)= \begin{cases}-\lambda(N-1)+\Delta(N-1) & \text { if } N \not \equiv 4,5(\bmod 8),  \tag{5.3.10}\\ -\lambda(N-1)+\frac{1}{2} H_{h}(N-1) & \text { if } N \equiv 5(\bmod 8) \\ -\lambda(N-1)+\Delta(N-1)+H_{u}(N-1) & \text { if } N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)\end{cases}
$$

(Recall that $H_{u}(M)=0$ if $M \equiv 2(\bmod 8)$.) Repeated application of (5.3.10) gives the following result.

Proposition 5.3.6. Let $N \geqslant 4$ and $1 \leqslant k \leqslant(N-3)$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& f_{N-k, N}^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N)) \\
& \quad= \begin{cases}(1-k \beta) \lambda(N-k)+\beta \Delta(N-k) & \text { if } N-k \not \equiv 4 \quad(\bmod 8) \text { and } k \geqslant 2, \\
& \text { or } k=1 \text { and } N-1 \not \equiv 3,4 \quad(\bmod 8), \\
(1-k \beta) \lambda(N-k)+\frac{1}{2} \beta H_{h}(N-k) & \text { if } N-k \equiv 4(\bmod 8), \\
(1-k \beta) \lambda(N-k)+\beta \Delta(N-k)+\beta H_{u}(N-k) & \text { if } k=1 \text { and } N-1 \equiv 3 \quad(\bmod 8) .\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

It will be convenient to let $f_{N, N}:=\operatorname{Id}_{\mathscr{F}(N)}$. The result below follows from Proposition 5.3.6, together with (5.2.7) and (5.3.2).
Proposition 5.3.7. Suppose that $N \geqslant 3,0 \leqslant k \leqslant(N-3)$, and $N-k \equiv 3(\bmod 8)\left(\right.$ hence $l_{N-k}$ makes sense; see (1.7.4)). Then

$$
\left(f_{N-k, N} \circ l_{N-k}\right)^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))= \begin{cases}(1-(k+1) \beta) \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2, N-k-1}\right) & \text { if } k \neq 1, \\ (1-4 \beta) \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2, N-k-1}\right) & \text { if } k=1 .\end{cases}
$$

Proposition 5.3.8. Suppose that $N \geqslant 4,0 \leqslant k \leqslant(N-4)$, and $N-k \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$ (hence $m_{N-k}$ and $p_{N-k-1}$ make sense; see (1.7.5) and (1.7.6))). Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(f_{N-k, N} \circ m_{N-k}\right)^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N)) \\
& \quad= \begin{cases}(1-\beta) \lambda\left(\mathrm{I}_{2, N-k-2} \oplus A_{1}\right)+\frac{3}{2} \beta H_{u}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2, N-k-2} \oplus A_{1}\right) & \text { if } k=0, \\
(1-k \beta) \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2, N-k-2} \oplus A_{1}\right)+\beta H_{u}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2, N-k-2} \oplus A_{1}\right) & \text { if } k \geqslant 1,\end{cases} \\
& \left(f_{N-k, N} \circ m_{N-k} \circ p_{N-k-1}\right)^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))= \begin{cases}(1-4 \beta) \lambda\left(\mathrm{I}_{2, N-k-2}\right) & \text { if } k=0, \\
(1-(k+2) \beta) \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2, N-k-2}\right) & \text { if } k \geqslant 1 .\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

Proof. The first equation follows from Proposition 5.3.6, together with (5.2.9) and (5.3.3). Next, note that $f_{N-k, N} \circ m_{N-k} \circ p_{N-k-1}=f_{N-k, N} \circ f_{N-k} \circ l_{N-k-1}=f_{N-k-1, N} \circ l_{N-k-1}$ by Claim 1.7.1 and hence the second equation follows from Proposition 5.3.7.

The proof of the result below is omitted because it is similar to the proof of Proposition 5.3.8.
Proposition 5.3.9. Suppose that $N \geqslant 5,0 \leqslant k \leqslant(N-5)$, and $N-k \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$ (hence $q_{N-k}$, $r_{N-k-1}$ and $p_{N-k-2}$ make sense; see (1.7.7), (1.7.8) and (1.7.6)). Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(f_{N-k, N} \circ q_{N-k}\right)^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N)) \\
& \quad=(1-k \beta) \lambda\left(\mathrm{II}_{2, N-k-3} \oplus A_{2}\right)+\beta H_{u}\left(\mathrm{I}_{2, N-k-3} \oplus A_{2}\right), \\
& \left(f_{N-k, N} \circ q_{N-k} \circ r_{N-k-1}\right)^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N)) \\
& \quad=(1-(k+1) \beta) \lambda\left(\mathrm{I}_{2, N-k-3} \oplus A_{1}\right)+\beta H_{u}\left(\mathrm{II}_{2, N-k-3} \oplus A_{1}\right), \\
& \left(f_{N-k, N} \circ q_{N-k} \circ r_{N-k-1} \circ p_{N-k-2}\right)^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N)) \\
& \quad=(1-(k+3) \beta) \lambda\left(\mathrm{I}_{2, N-k-3}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

### 5.4 Heuristics for the predictions

Let $15 \leqslant N$. We define a collection $\operatorname{Tower}(N)$ of closed subsets of $\mathscr{F}(N)$ as follows: $X \subset \mathscr{F}(N)$ belongs to $\operatorname{Tower}(N)$ if and only if one of the following holds:
(1) $X=\operatorname{Im} f_{M, N}$ for $11 \leqslant M \leqslant N$;
(2) $X=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{M, N} \circ l_{M}\right)$ for $11 \leqslant M \leqslant N\left(\right.$ recall that $\left.f_{N, N}=\mathrm{id}_{\mathscr{F}(N)}\right)$ and $M \equiv 3(\bmod 8)$;
(3) $X=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{M, N} \circ m_{M}\right)$ for $12 \leqslant M \leqslant N$ and $M \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$;
(4) $X=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{M, N} \circ q_{M}\right)$ for $13 \leqslant M \leqslant N$ and $M \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$.

Every $X \in \operatorname{Tower}(N)$ is irreducible (and closed) because it is the image of a regular map, whose domain is a projective irreducible set.

Definition 5.4.1. Let $N \geqslant 15$. Given $X \in \operatorname{Tower}(N)$, we let:
(1) $t_{N}(X)=N-M$ if
(1a) $X=\operatorname{Im} f_{M, N}$ and $14 \leqslant M \leqslant N$; or
(1b) $X=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{M, N} \circ m_{M}\right)$, where $12 \leqslant M \leqslant N-1$ and $M \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$; or
(1c) $X=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{M, N} \circ q_{M}\right)$, where $13 \leqslant M \leqslant N$ and $M \equiv 5(\bmod 8)$;
(2) $t_{N}(X)=N-M+1$ if $X=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{M, N} \circ l_{M}\right)$, where $11 \leqslant M \leqslant N$, with $M \neq N-1$ and $M \equiv 3(\bmod 8) ;$
(3) $t_{N}(X)=N-14$ if $X=\operatorname{Im} f_{M, N}$ and $11 \leqslant M \leqslant 13$;
(4) $t_{N}(X)=1$ if $X=\operatorname{Im} m_{N}$, where $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$;
(5) $t_{N}(X)=4$ if $X=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{N-1, N} \circ l_{N-1}\right)$, where $N \equiv 4(\bmod 8)$.

Proposition 5.4.2. Let $15 \leqslant N$. Let $X \in \operatorname{Tower}(N)$ (and hence $X$ is $\mathbb{Q}$-factorial). If $\beta \in[0,1] \cap \mathbb{Q}$, then we have an equality of $\mathbb{Q}$-Cartier divisor classes:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))\right|_{X}=\left.\left(1-t_{N}(X) \cdot \beta\right) \lambda(N)\right|_{X}+D_{X} \tag{5.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $D_{X}$ is an effective divisor whose support is a union of elements of $\operatorname{Tower}(N)$.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Proof. First, we consider the case $X=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{M, N}\right)$ and $11 \leqslant M \leqslant 13$. There exists $c \geqslant 0$ such that

$$
f_{M, N}^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))=(1-(N-M) \beta) \lambda(M)+\frac{1}{2} \beta H_{h}(M)+c \beta H_{u}(M)
$$

by Proposition 5.3.6. On the other hand, by (3.1.4) (with $N$ replaced by $M$ ), we have

$$
f_{M, N}^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))=(1-(N-14) \beta) \lambda(M)+\left(c+\frac{\tau(M)}{32}(\mu(M+8)-\mu(M))\right) \beta H_{u}(M) .
$$

Thus, (5.4.1) holds because $\mu(M) \leqslant \mu(M+8)$ for $4 \leqslant M \leqslant 14$ and

$$
H_{u}(M)= \begin{cases}\operatorname{Im} l_{11} & \text { if } M=11 \\ \operatorname{Im} m_{12} & \text { if } M=12 \\ \operatorname{Im} q_{13} & \text { if } M=13\end{cases}
$$

This proves that (5.4.1) holds if $X=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{M, N}\right)$ and $11 \leqslant M \leqslant 13$. In all other cases, (5.4.1) is an immediate consequence of the results in $\S 5.3 .4$ and the isomorphisms in (1.7.4), (1.7.5), (1.7.6), (1.7.7), and (1.7.8).

Because of (5.4.1), we expect that if $t_{N}(X) \neq 0$, then $\left(t_{N}(X) \lambda(N)+\Delta(N)\right)$ generates a wall of the Mori chamber decomposition of the convex cone spanned by $\lambda(N)$ and $\Delta(N)$, and that the center of the corresponding flip contains the strict transform of $X$. Now notice that if $X, Y \in \operatorname{Tower}(N)$, and $X \subset Y$, then $t_{N}(X) \geqslant t_{N}(Y)$. Thus, in order to list candidates for the centers of the flips, we give the definition below.

Definition 5.4.3. Let $15 \leqslant N$. We let Center $(N) \subset \operatorname{Tower}(N)$ be the subset of $X$ such that:
(1) $a_{N}(X)>0$; and
(2) if $Y \in \operatorname{Tower}(N)$ properly contains $X$, then $a_{N}(X)>a_{N}(Y)$.

Let $X \in \operatorname{Tower}(N)$, i.e. one of Items (1)-(5) of Definition 5.4 .1 holds: then $X$ does not belong to Center $(N)$ if and only if Item (3) holds.

We can summarize Prediction 5.1.1 as follows: the walls of the Mori chamber decomposition of the convex cone spanned by $\lambda(N)$ and $\Delta(N)$ are generated by the vectors $t_{N}(X) \lambda(N)+\Delta(N)$, where $X$ runs through the elements of $\operatorname{Center}(N)$. If $t=t_{N}(X)$ for some $X \in \operatorname{Center}(N)$, and $t>1$, then the center of the flip corresponding to $t_{N}(X) \lambda(N)+\Delta(N)$ is the union of the strict transforms of the elements $Y \in \operatorname{Center}(N)$ such that $t_{N}(Y)=t$. Lastly, $\lambda(N)+\Delta(N)$ contracts the strict transforms of the elements $Y \in \operatorname{Center}(N)$ such that $t_{N}(Y)=1$.

A more detailed description goes as follows. Consider the wall closest to the ray spanned by $\lambda(N)$, i.e. that spanned by $\left(\lambda(N)+(N-10)^{-1} \Delta(N)\right)$, with center $X=\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{11, N} \circ l_{11}\right)$. Then $D_{X}=0$ by Proposition 5.3.7 and hence $\left.\left(\lambda(N)+(N-10)^{-1} \Delta(N)\right)\right|_{X}$ is the opposite of an ample class. What should we expect $\mathscr{F}\left(N,(N-10)^{-1}+\epsilon\right)$ to look like? In order to answer this, we recall Looijenga's key observation: if $X$ is an irreducible component of $\Delta^{(k)}(N)$, then the exceptional divisor of $B l_{X} \mathscr{F}(N)$ (a weighted blow-up of $\mathscr{F}(N)$ with center $X$ ) is a trivial weighted projective bundle over $X$, away from $\Delta^{(k+1)}(N)$ (this is because $\Delta^{(k)}(N)$ is the quotient by $\Gamma(N)$ of the points of intersection of $k$ hyperplane sections of $\left.\mathscr{D}_{\Lambda_{N}}^{+}\right)$. For our initial $X$, i.e. $\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{11, N} \circ l_{11}\right)$, this translates into the prediction that $\mathscr{F}\left(N,(N-10)^{-1}+\epsilon\right)$ is obtained from $\mathscr{F}\left(N,(N-10)^{-1}-\epsilon\right)$ by replacing (the closure of) $\operatorname{Im}\left(f_{11, N} \circ l_{11}\right)$ with a $w \mathbb{P}^{N-11}$. What about the remaining flips, corresponding to $\lambda(N)+k^{-1} \Delta(N)$ for $k \in\{N-12, N-11, \ldots, 2\}$ ? First, we note that if

## R. Laza and K. O'Grady

$X \in \operatorname{Center}(N)$, then (5.4.1) holds with $D_{X}$ an effective divisor whose support is a union of elements of Tower $(N)$, except if $X=\operatorname{Im} f_{14, N}$. Suppose for the moment that $X \neq \operatorname{Im} f_{14, N}$; then since $t_{N}(Y)>t_{N}(X)$ for all prime divisors in the support of $D_{X}$ (by definition of Tower $(N)$ ) and because $\mathscr{F}\left(N, k^{-1}+\epsilon\right)$ is obtained from $\mathscr{F}\left(N, k^{-1}-\epsilon\right)$ by replacing (the closure of) centers $W$ such that $t_{N}(W)=k$ with projective spaces of dimension $N-1-\operatorname{cod}(W, \mathscr{F}(N))$, we see that the picture replicates itself. Lastly, let us look at the picture for $X=\operatorname{Im} f_{14, N}$. In this case Gritsenko's relation, i.e. Corollary 3.1.3, reads $H_{h}(14)=H_{u}(14)$. A geometric description of the rational equivalence $H_{h}(14)=H_{u}(14)$ gives that $H_{h}(14)$ and $H_{u}(14)$ are actually trivial outside $H_{h}(14) \cap H_{u}(14)$ and hence (5.4.1) for $X=\operatorname{Im} f_{14, N}$ holds with $D_{X}=0$. This then suggests that the usual description holds also for the flip corresponding to $\operatorname{Im} f_{14, N}$.

Remark 5.4.4. The set of values $t_{N}(X)$ for $X \in \operatorname{Center}(N)$ is obtained by adding 1 to each value $t_{N-1}(Y)$ for $Y \in \operatorname{Center}(N-1)$ and adjoining the value $1=t_{N}\left(H_{h}(N)\right)$. This is explained by the formulae in Proposition 5.3.6. In fact, for simplicity suppose that $N-1 \not \equiv 3,4(\bmod 8)$. Then, for $\beta \neq 1$, we have

$$
f_{N}^{*}(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))=(1-\beta) \lambda(N-1)+\beta \Delta(N-1)=(1-\beta)\left(\lambda(N-1)+\frac{\beta}{1-\beta} \Delta(N-1)\right)
$$

This explains the behavior described above because, if $\beta /(1-\beta)=1 / k$, then $\beta=1 /(k+1)$.
An induction on $N$ (see Remark 5.4.4) proves the following result.
Proposition 5.4.5. Let $N \geqslant 11$ and let

$$
0 \leqslant \beta< \begin{cases}(N-10)^{-1} & \text { if } N \neq 12 \\ 1 / 4 & \text { if } N=12\end{cases}
$$

be rational. If $C \subset \mathscr{F}(N)$ is a complete curve, then

$$
C \cdot(\lambda(N)+\beta \Delta(N))>0 .
$$

Remark 5.4.6. The locally symmetric varieties $\mathscr{F}(N)$ are not projective, but they are swept out by complete curves. In fact, the complement of $\mathscr{F}(N)$ in the Baily-Borel compactification $\mathscr{F}(N)^{*}$ is of dimension 1, and the assertion follows because $\operatorname{dim} \mathscr{F}(N)=N \geqslant 3$.

## Acknowledgements

This project was started and first developed while both authors were visiting the IAS as participants in the special program on 'Topology of Algebraic Varieties'. We are grateful to the IAS for hosting us and offering an ideal research environment. The IAS stay of the first author was partially supported by NSF institute grant DMS-1128155. The stay of the second author was partially supported by the Giorgio and Elena Petronio Fellowship Fund, the Giorgio and Elena Petronio Fellowship Fund II, and the Fund for Mathematics of the IAS.

We are indebted in more than one way to E. Looijenga. First, our work has been inspired by his ground-breaking papers [Loo03a, Loo03b] and secondly we had several discussions with him on the subject of this work. Lastly, Looijenga shared some unpublished notes with us (relevant to future investigation of the quartic case). Additionally, we have discussed with numerous people at various stages of the project. In particular, we thank V. Alexeev, S. Casalaina-Martin, G. Farkas, V. Gritsenko, K. Hulek, B. Hassett, S. Kondo, Z. Li, D. Oprea, R. Pandharipande, and L. Zhang.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ Surfaces

## References

BLMM17 N. Bergeron, Z. Li, J. Millson and C. Moeglin, The Noether-Lefschetz conjecture and generalizations, Invent. Math. 208 (2017), 501-552.
Bor95 R. E. Borcherds, Automorphic forms on $\mathrm{O}_{s+2,2}(\mathbf{R})$ and infinite products, Invent. Math. 120 (1995), 161-213.

BKPSB98 R. E. Borcherds, L. Katzarkov, T. Pantev and N. I. Shepherd-Barron, Families of K3 surfaces, J. Algebraic Geom. 7 (1998), 183-193.

Bru02 J. H. Bruinier, Borcherds products on $O(2, l)$ and Chern classes of Heegner divisors, Lecture Notes in Mathematics, vol. 1780 (Springer, Berlin, 2002).
CMJL14 S. Casalaina-Martin, D. Jensen and R. Laza, Log canonical models and variation of GIT for genus 4 canonical curves, J. Algebraic Geom. 23 (2014), 727-764.
FM02 R. Friedman and J. W. Morgan, Exceptional groups and del Pezzo surfaces, in Symposium in honor of C. H. Clemens, Contemporary Mathematics, vol. 312 (American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI, 2002), 101-116.
Gri18 V. A. Gritsenko, Reflective modular forms and their applications, Uspekhi Mat. Nauk 73 (2018), 53-122.

GHS07 V. A. Gritsenko, K. Hulek and G. K. Sankaran, The Kodaira dimension of the moduli of K3 surfaces, Invent. Math. 169 (2007), 519-567.
GHS09 V. A. Gritsenko, K. Hulek and G. K. Sankaran, Abelianisation of orthogonal groups and the fundamental group of modular varieties, J. Algebra 322 (2009), 463-478.
HH13 B. Hassett and D. Hyeon, Log minimal model program for the moduli space of stable curves: the first flip, Ann. of Math. (2) 177 (2013), 911-968.
IKKR19 A. Iliev, G. Kapustka, M. Kapustka and K. Ranestad, EPW cubes, J. Reine Angew. Math. 748 (2019), 241-268.
Kir89 F. C. Kirwan, Moduli spaces of degree d hypersurfaces in $\mathbf{P}_{n}$, Duke Math. J. 58 (1989), 39-78.
KL89 F. C. Kirwan and R. Lee, The cohomology of moduli spaces of K3 surfaces of degree 2. I, Topology 28 (1989), 495-516.
Laz10 R. Laza, The moduli space of cubic fourfolds via the period map, Ann. of Math. (2) $\mathbf{1 7 2}$ (2010), 673-711.

LO18a R. Laza and K. G. O'Grady, GIT versus Baily-Borel compactification for K3's which are double covers of $\mathbb{P}^{1} \times \mathbb{P}^{1}$, Preprint (2018), arXiv:1801.04845.
LO18b R. Laza and K. G. O'Grady, GIT versus Baily-Borel compactification for quartic K3 surfaces, in Geometry of moduli-the Abel symposium 2017, Abel Symposia, vol. 14 (Springer, Berlin, 2018), 217-283.

Loo86 E. Looijenga, New compactifications of locally symmetric varieties, in Proc. 1984 Vancouver conf. in algebraic geometry, CMS Conference Proceedings, vol. 6 (American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI, 1986), 341-364.
Loo03a E. Looijenga, Compactifications defined by arrangements. I. The ball quotient case, Duke Math. J. 118 (2003), 151-187.
Loo03b E. Looijenga, Compactifications defined by arrangements. II. Locally symmetric varieties of type IV, Duke Math. J. 119 (2003), 527-588.
Loo09 E. Looijenga, The period map for cubic fourfolds, Invent. Math. 177 (2009), 213-233.
May72 A. L. Mayer, Families of K-3 surfaces, Nagoya Math. J. 48 (1972), 1-17.
Mon16 G. Mongardi, On the monodromy of irreducible symplectic manifolds, Algebr. Geom. 3 (2016), 385-391.
Mus06 M. Mustaţă, Multiplier ideals of hyperplane arrangements, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 358 (2006), 5015-5023.

## Moduli of quartic $K 3$ surfaces

Nik80 V. V. Nikulin, Integral symmetric bilinear forms and some of their applications, Math. USSR Izv. 43 (1980), 103-167.
O'Gr06 K. G. O'Grady, Irreducible symplectic 4-folds and Eisenbud-Popescu-Walter sextics, Duke Math. J. 134 (2006), 99-137.
O'Gr08 K. G. O'Grady, Dual double EPW-sextics and their periods, Pure Appl. Math. Q. 4 (2008), 427-468.
O'Gr15 K. G. O'Grady, Periods of double EPW-sextics, Math. Z. 280 (2015), 485-524.
O'Gr16 K. G. O'Grady, Moduli of double EPW-sextics, Mem. Amer. Math. Soc. 240 (2016), 1-172.
Rap08 A. Rapagnetta, On the Beauville form of the known irreducible symplectic varieties, Math. Ann. 340 (2008), 77-95.
Sha80 J. Shah, A complete moduli space for K3 surfaces of degree 2, Ann. of Math. (2) $\mathbf{1 1 2}$ (1980), 485-510.

Sha81 J. Shah, Degenerations of K3 surfaces of degree 4, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 263 (1981), 271-308.

Tha96 M. Thaddeus, Geometric invariant theory and flips, J. Amer. Math. Soc. 9 (1996), 691-723.
Ver13 M. Verbitsky, Mapping class group and a global Torelli theorem for hyperkähler manifolds, Duke Math. J. 162 (2013), 2929-2986.

Radu Laza radu.laza@stonybrook.edu
Stony Brook University,
Stony Brook, NY 11794, USA
Kieran O'Grady ogrady@mat.uniroma1.it
'Sapienza' Universitá di Roma, Rome, Italy


[^0]:    Received 7 February 2018, accepted in final form 18 March 2019.
    2010 Mathematics Subject Classification 14D20 (primary), 14J28 (secondary).
    Keywords: moduli, periods, K3 surfaces.
    Research of the first author is supported in part by NSF grants DMS-125481 and DMS-1361143. Research of the second author is supported in part by PRIN 2013.
    This journal is © Foundation Compositio Mathematica 2019.

[^1]:    ${ }^{1}$ The present $k$ has no relation to the $k$ appearing in $\S 1.7 .2$, which is $\lfloor N / 8\rfloor$ for $N \equiv 3,4(\bmod 8)$.

